



*Magic Bullet in the
Magical Land*

魔法の国の魔弾

狩真健 Ken Karima · Illustration 真 sinsora 空

MAGIC BULLET IN MAGIC LAND

– Mahou no Kuni no Madan –

- Volume 1 -

BATTLEGROUND

AUTHOR

Shu Masatake

Zemiru

ARTIST

Sinsora

[Translated by: Rebirth Online World]


– SYNOPSIS –

The Main Character, Watari Karito, is a veteran player of a Military Shooting VRMMORPG.

The place which he wandered into was another world of swords, magic and gambling. What awaited him there was a demi-human sister and a battlefield full of malice.

If one wants to survive, if one wants to protect ——
—— He will need to use all means.

He squeezed the trigger.



Watarai Karito

A Japanese that was
transferred into the world
of Military RPG

Rina

Wolf therianthrope
12 years old

Reona

Wolf therianthrope
15 years old

Ordy

Platoon Leader of
Citadel Defense
Force



Marian

Magician of Belcaria
Allied Country

Hilda

Female Knight of
Alwina Kingdom

「レオナはリイナと一緒に向こうに行くんだ。
姿勢を低くして先に逃げる！」

「カリトはどうするつもりだい!?!」

「反撃するんだ!」



PROLOGUE

BRIEFING

At the back of a deserted mountain hut, a tattered book was enshrined onto a wooden desk that seemed like it would collapse soon. The cover was rolled up by the wind blowing from an opened door, and the pages were rolled up lightly.

With the wind dying, the pages stopped flipping as well. It was exactly at the last page which had one sentence written on it.

What was written there was this.

[My name is Watarai Karito. If you are able to read this, it means that I'm assuming that you are a person from my world, so I'm going to continue my story.

I came to this world on year 20XX Month X day XX. It was around half-past 8 PM in Japan's local time. At the very least, it was around that time when I last confirmed it.

My last memory before waking up to this place was selecting the mercenary mode of the VRMMO type military shooting game. I have no idea of the sequence of events on how I arrived in this place thereafter.

What I can only think of and imagine is that some problem had occurred on the administrator's part. Otherwise, it would be due to the fault that I tried to continue through the game with the unlimited goods and money settings. However, there were many players who have obtained the privilege of unlimited goods and money settings aside from myself, and I have never heard of players being harmed by the occurring bugs.

Anyway, even though I still can't believe it myself, I was forced to accept things when I realized that I had transformed into the appearance of my character at the beginning of the game. When I looked at the mirror, I was surprised that my face, my body and my height were exactly the same as my character in the game. This appearance was much better than my real self though.

But, what surprised me more was, the world of <World Battle-Ground Online> that

I've played so far... Aahh, it's so troublesome to write the full name each time, so from now on, let's go with the shortened name <WBGO>. Anyway, the world that I've played in so far was of a totally different setting from this world.

When <WBGO>'s world was set to be in a modern day war environment, I don't recall seeing winged animals like dragons appearing in the sky... No, actually, during special missions where sudden gene manipulation occurred, creating a setting of biological weapons such as Tai^onto or pseudo zo^obies happened. The company got harshly criticized at that time.

I was surprised when I saw a dragon flying over my head for the first time. As a result of looking up all the time, I fell down from the cliff due to my dumbfounded state... That made me realize that this world is real. Well, it was mostly because of the pain, because when you were shot by a gun, or blown up by a grenade in <WBGO>, you will not feel pain.

At first, I didn't want to accept this reality and shut myself in this hut for a week. The following week ended up being spent on understanding the current situation. Thereafter, while trying to accomplish all the things that I could possibly do until recently, I continued to wait for someone to come to this hut. After performing trial and error, I understood that I could use every weapon and equipment that I possessed before in this world freely, not only appearance wise, but I am also able to exhibit those skills obtained in <WBGO>.

What about other players aside from me? No, it doesn't seem like there would be another human being from my world that would come here.

I stayed in this hut for a full year according to the Earth's calendar. If it wasn't for the clean well of spring water that I found located at the back of the hut, and an unlimited supply of the recovery item, usable ration, I would have died of starvation a long time ago.

In my former world, I lived in solitude. In the real world, I left high school halfway after sending a gang of bullies into the hospital. At the same time, my parents passed away in an accident. Because of that, I slowly became a NEET and shut myself inside my apartment while living off of the money I got from my parents' insurance, and played games all day long. I didn't have any human relations except for those from the internet. I was drowning in solitude everyday.

I thought that was enough. I didn't know what true loneliness was.

It made me realize that I was naive.

I can't endure it anymore. I literally didn't meet anyone else here, didn't talk, and, how long has it been since I came into contact with other people? I came to realize how harsh this world was.

Therefore I decide to leave here.

I don't care who it is, I just want to see someone's face. I want to hear a person's voice. If this world really is a fantasy, then I wouldn't even mind if it's an elf, or a someone with cat ears or dog ears. Even a dragon that can speak will be fine too. As long as we can have mutual understanding of each other, even a specter would be gladly welcomed.

I can no longer stand this loneliness. It's already a miracle that I haven't gone crazy. Those castaways who drifted into an uninhabited island must have felt like this too.

To my countryman who has come to this world... I have headed north. Follow the small path down the slope that I've opened, and take the left path to head north from there.

I pray for a comrade that can read these words to appear. If it really happens, I want you to not forget.

That you aren't alone. At the very least, it's because you have me, someone like you in this world.

I wish you good luck.]



How much have I walked?

I have been walking for three days and three nights. Except for eating and sleeping, I continued to walk even when the sky turned dark. From what my body tells me, it seems like I've walked about 100 km.

I almost didn't feel any physical fatigue. In the modern warfare MMORPG <WBGO>

mercenary mode, you can acquire experience and raise the player's rank at the same time by clearing the quests and training. Also, it became a means of strengthening one's parameters through the allocation of points gained.

His physical abilities such as Life Point(LP), Muscle Strength, Stamina, Agility, and Reflexes were strengthened to the maximum. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that he was invincible. After all, it was only limited to the mercenary mode.

<WBGO>'s biggest realistic setting would lie in its pure implementation of the [Tactical Combat Mode], where battles among players occur. It's a system where battle reproductions were made as a gaudy performance, and the only difference from real combat was that nobody actually died from it.

Karito's tactical combat mode rank was above average. Amongst the numerous participating active military soldiers, he could be considered as one of the superior ones.

Still, the active military officers and players were fixed with minimum parameters, and special items and recovery items will not appear. This is the realistic sense of urgency that the [Tactical Combat Mode] provides. For those players who purely want to enjoy the exhilarating gameplay, they would usually be inclined to choose the [Mercenary Mode].

Of course, in whichever mode, like any other MMO games, it's possible to enjoy it by teaming up with other players and dividing into opposing teams for player battles.

In addition, the present Karito was equipped with a special exoskeleton armour which only appears in mercenary mode. The armour can give various additional effects other than damage reduction when equipped. It was the so-called armour of magic in RPG games. But, it was not made by magic, but from technology. You could say that it's closer to a SF (Science Fiction) setting.

The rifle he was holding in his arms for self-protection weighed the same as a branch of dried wood.

Karito's current equipment was a rifle called M14EBR. It was customized from the special forces' Springfield M14 automatic rifle which uses 7.62 mm caliber bullets.

In the game (and real world), it has high output power, and a fully automatic rapid-

firing mechanism. It was a prideful, high performance all-round gun that can be used for accurate and long distance sniping. Although it was hard to handle due to its large recoil, with muscle strength that has been improved to max, and with the armor's additional effect (recoil absorption UP) in addition to Karito's skill, it is more than enough to demonstrate the full power of M14EBR without much adverse effects.

Benefitting from his maximum status and equipment that have been mastered, Karito's speed didn't even drop by a bit even though he had already been walking for three days and three nights.

But, he was reaching his limit in a different sense.

The road seemed to stretch on forever without end. He didn't see anyone on this road. He didn't meet a half-beast, which has the lower body of a beast and the upper body of a human, nor an elf, or cat eared or dog eared people either.

He, Wakari Karito, had not escaped from his loneliness yet.

As long as a person lives, no matter if he is walking, sleeping, or doing nothing at all, he will go hungry.

As Karito became hungry, he sat down under the shade of a tree, and selected military rations from the list of items. Two plastic packs appeared out of nowhere, and landed onto his hand.

The contents were cooked rice and hamburger steak. Each meal was attached with a heating agent to warm it, and a spork.

In <WBGO>, military rations were treated as recovery items, but in reality, the actual rations that each country adopted came in a wide variety.

It became interesting when a foreign player gets used to rations other than those their home country adopts, while on the other hand, one would receive a special privilege after collecting various countries' rations. By now, Karito had finished collecting the rations of the countries that had been added recently.

...I never thought that these rations would become my lifeline now that I have been sent to a different world.

After sampling and comparing the rations from various countries for a year, as expected, since I am Japanese, the rations from Japan (a reproduction of the military rations from JSDF) suit me the best.

The military rations that could only be a simple consumable item, even if it was a set menu, since the beginning of the game, have now become my important meals after I was transferred to this world. It sure is ironic.

Now, let's get back to the topic.

(Next, should I change into the French military uniform...?) I wondered.

I was lucky that there was a PDA (Portable Terminal) in my breast pocket. I selected the item inside the item box, and changed into the equipment.

A PDA is an important item in <WBGO> that's given to players at the beginning of the game.

Whatever happens, it won't break or become lost. All I need to do is to imagine it, and then I can take it out or put it away anywhere I want. I can put it away into my back pocket, and in the next moment, I can take it out from my breast pocket. Such tricks are possible.

With the PDA, we can store items, change equipments, record conversations with friends, display a map, assist in the provision of expenditure money, and various actions that can let you play the game more comfortably. But, after coming to this world, only the item storage and equipment change functions were useable.

The weight of the equipment a player can equip is predetermined. It is impossible to equip equipment with a weight that's over the limit. The only ways to get around the limitation of equippable weight itself was a training mission to be cleared for strengthening physical strength, or to rely on armours with additional effects to boost the physical limitations. Furthermore, the armours themselves aren't included in the list of equipments.

The maximum reinforcement a player can equip is 100 kg. As long as it doesn't exceed that, Karito can easily carry any huge objects.

The difference between the equipment list and the item box is that any equipment

stored inside the equipment list could be equipped instantly just by imagining it, but there is a limit to how much it can store. As for the item box, even though it can store an unlimited amount of items, on the contrary, one would have to perform the action of selecting the items from the PDA. That's about all of it, I think.

I take out my PDA and choose an item, and allowed it to process my command.

"...Shit." I crushed an empty tin can lying near my foot irritatedly.

I had waited for someone to appear while shutting myself in that mountain hut for a year, and when I finally decided to come out from my hut to travel the world...

Only three days, three days. It hit Karito that positive results do not always follow after the actions done.

Even if you have a well-trained body, it doesn't mean you have mental strength proportionate to that robust body.

(Maybe I shouldn't have left the mountain hut after all?) I sighed.

Even if I regret it now, it's already too late. I have come too far already. I do not feel like tracing back the path that I took before any longer. I had no choice but to move forward.

Gasa

"Huh!!!?" Karito exclaimed.

Karito stood up immediately after hearing the sound of vegetation being trod on by something, and held his M14EBR reflexively.



In fact, when he was still staying in the hut, he had experienced a similar situation where he was attacked by a bear-like monster while investigating the vicinity. Even though at the first glance it looked like a bear, but it also had similarities with wolves, and it also has a horn like a deer's. As expected, it was a strange animal from fantasy.

Soon after encountering it, out of surprise and fear, I unconsciously summoned an AA-12 automatic shotgun and a drum of magazine loaded with double buckshot shells (About 32 rounds x 1 double buckshot shell, with 9 lead = 288 lead buckshot), and fired at it, turning the monster into a state more hideous than mince meat. Incidentally, due to the grotesque scene of intestinal guts and the blood's intense smell, I puked.

[TL: So yeah I didn't understand much about that stuff but after asking google-san I get something like this 1 drum of magazine can load 32 rounds of buckshot shell, and inside a buckshot shell it contain 9 lead bullet. So when you fired 1 buckshot it will spread that 9 bullet out from the shell and I guess the MC emptied the magazine so he shoot a total 288 lead bullet.]

Anyway, after experiencing something like that, I have learnt my lesson. Karito activated the goggles' function on, and assumed a position where he could shoot with the M14EBR anytime. If, by any chance, the other party is a human, it wouldn't be something to be made light of.

At a glance, the goggles looked like it was designed for military use, and had a thick frame, but in fact, this was a special pair of goggles that was granted only after you cleared a certain mission and was promoted to certain rank. The goggles can be used as a telescope, infrared goggles, and night vision goggles. It can also be used to see through something and search for enemies with high efficiency.

Upon reading Karito's thoughts, the goggles activated the scan mode. Within a radius of 15 metres, he was able to see through a thin wall, and see a silhouette on the other side. Within the field of vision, at the distance of 15 metres, the scenery beyond the thin wall would be projected as silhouettes. Compared to the real scene, the transparent silhouette was reflected with little deviation as it overlapped with the visual field.

"What is that?"

He saw a shadow move just a moment ago. Because the object had immediately disappeared from the effective range of the scan, he wasn't able to confirm the identity

of the object. It was somehow beast-like, yet also somehow human-like.

“At least there were animal ears and a tail, right?” He asked himself.

At any rate, it was certainly very agile. It had disappeared into the depths of the forest in an instant. If I was attacked by such an opponent...

“In any case, I will switch to scout radar.” He muttered.

He decided to switch on said function. By sensing the enemy’s heartbeat, their position would be displayed on the goggles. The searching range was about 15 metres too.

I looked up to the sky. At a distance, a bird was circling at high altitude. If only I could fly like a bird, then I would immediately be able to find a town or a village where people might live.

“If I have an Unmanned Aerial Vehicle (UAV) I should be able to use it to check... Huh?” Karito mumbled.

At the edge of his vision, he saw something besides the bird and the clouds. He strained his eyes. Both of Karito’s eyes were opened to their limits when he saw the real nature of that thing.

It was smoke. Blocked by the forest, he didn’t know where or why it occurred.

But, there would be no smoke without fire. The possibility that the forest burning on its own was low.

The smoke continued rising steadily.

“There might be a person there...” For a moment, he groaned, flooded with emotions. “A person, there is a person there...!!!!”

Without a second thought, Karito began to run.

With his physical ability strengthened to maximum, and the addition of the exoskeleton armour that strengthened his muscle power, his speed had easily surpassed the 100m run world record.

“I can meet a person, I can meet a person, I can meet a PERSON.....!!!!” He yelled.

Stimulated by hope, Karito failed to notice something as he desperately ran towards the site.

Soon after he started running, another two or three columns of smoke rose from beyond the forest, adding to the darkness that was polluting the sky.

Without realizing anything until he arrived at the scene, the young man with raven hair who was seized by loneliness continued to rush ahead recklessly.

CHAPTER 1

FIRST ENCOUNTER

Without slowing down his full sprint dash, Karito continued until the scenery changed into a single path sandwiched between forests. There, he finally stopped in his tracks.

Or, it should be said that he couldn't help but stop.

Washing away the very glimmer of hope that moved Karito's running muscles, the shocking sight spread out before him made him dumbfounded. It couldn't be helped.

A village-like settlement was wrapped in flames.

The reason why he knew that it wasn't an accidental fire was because of the intense smell of iron rust and gore that was carried by the wind to Karito's nose.

It was exactly like that time when even a shotgun couldn't smash the horned bear in its original form. He couldn't help but recognize the similar states.

Above all, the houses that were burning were all constructed from wood and plaster. Surrounding the vicinity were figures of people crouching and lying down on the ground, their bodies dyed with fresh blood flowing from various wounds, most notably from arrows penetrating their bodies.

Amidst were shapes beyond recognition, people who became chunks of flesh, with bones and internal organs scattered on the ground. A great portion of the ground's surface had turned reddish-black from all the blood that was soaked up.

It didn't seem like they died because of the suffocating smoke. No matter how much I think about it, they were all beasts, or possibly even artificially made bodies.

It was an odd scene, strange enough that it didn't make Karito vomit out all the food that he had just eaten a few minutes ago.

"...Huh...!!" Karito gasped.

To his own surprise, when he stumbled upon the scene of the massacre, he rolled over to the thicket beside him for cover in reflex.

This slaughterfest was clearly done by a third party. Despite it being a fantasy world, Karito didn't think that there exists a beast that can use a bow and arrows.

He laid his M14EBR onto the two legged pod, and assumed a snipping posture. This was the movement that he had performed countless times inside the game. But, this was obviously reality - the stench of death assaulting his nose, his heart beating like an alarm bell, knocking loudly into his thoughts.

Without using the scope that was attached onto the top of his rifle, Karito activated the zooming function of his special goggles. It was much easier to confirm the situation by having a vast field of vision.

I focused on the piles of damaged human bodies while clenching my teeth. I checked them one by one for survivors, even for those that seemed to still be breathing slightly from the distance. But, I couldn't even find one survivor at all.

I checked once again, but the results didn't change. I was attacked by an indescribable feeling of impermanence. Have the people who did this already left this place...?

The enlarged field of vision of the goggles showed the detailed state of the dead bodies to Karito. Every person's face was contorted in anguish, their eyes and mouths wide open from rigor mortis. Without any regard of it being shown through the scope, the vividness of death struck Karito's conscience.

Their expressions upon death were so intense that looking at a scene of human bodies that were scattered around from an explosion would be better.

When I finally couldn't endure it any longer, the taste of sour gastric juice spreads in my mouth. I forcibly swallowed it, and pushed the contents back into my stomach.

I felt that the state of the corpses that were lying all over the place looked different from normal, leaving aside the question of how does a normal corpse look like, but it was too late when I noticed this.

(Animal ears? Was this a village of beastmen?)

Shifting my attention away from the way they died, I confirmed the general state of their bodies once more. I noticed that half of them had something on both sides of their heads, of which resembled cat, dog or cow ears. Also, the region between their waists and bottoms had a tail growing out from there.

Even though there were a few childrens' corpses mixed in there, most of them were the grown bodies of males and females with animal ears and tails. The remaining half were the corpses of ordinary humans.

Whatever the state was, the fact didn't change that all of the men and women, old and young, all who lived in this village were massacred.

So, the reality was obvious.

———If only I had arrived earlier, would I have been able to change anything?

At that time, the shadow of a person jumped out from the back of a burning house. I shifted my focus to the shadow of the figure quickly.

"A girl?" I muttered.

She looked to be about ten years old. Wearing a plain apron dress with conspicuous patchwork, the girl looked desperate.

Karito looked over to the figure that was frantically crossing his field of vision.

But as soon as I thought that there was something flashing for an instant, the girl came tumbling down.

No, something was different. She was shot by an arrow from her back. The arrow pierced deep into her thigh, and a look of anguish appeared on her face.

After a short while, several men appeared from the corner of a building. To be exact, there were five people. One man wore a pure white robe just like the typical guise of a magician from fantasies. The other four soldiers were dressed similarly in light equipment, strapped with longswords and bows. Looking at the soldiers' vulgar smiles, it made Karito remember the bullies from his high school days.

All of the swords in their hands were stained with blood. The soldier-like group

appeared to have worn a set of uniformed equipments, as everyone had a metal slip-guard protecting their torso of the same design.

The magician also had hair as white as his robes. Not just his appearance, but his body seemed to be surrounded by a white faint glow, a mist, or perhaps a halo of some sort. I wonder if that was just my imagination?

“Ya, just when I thought I was able to secure a living female! Isn’t this a kid!” One of them complained.

“Hey, don’t ask for too much. It can’t be helped since we got carried away and slaughtered all of them.” Another replied.

“Urgh... Ah...” The little girl crawled and cringed in an attempt to escape from the men, even if it’s just by a little bit.

However, on that girl’s back, a soldier’s armoured boot stopped her. A groan of pain leaked out from her mouth.

Karito wasn’t able to hear their conversation from his position. But, with the aid of an interception mic, it would have been possible to pick up even their breaths. However, at this moment, Karito was frozen to the spot while holding his breath, forgetting the existence of the equipment.

“Now now, let’s hurry up and bring her back to the carriage. Everyone is waiting as well.” One of them said placatingly.

“What should we do, Rezado-sama...?” Someone asked.

“This idiot! How can you speak so brazenly?! I am sorry, Rezado-sama. Because he is just a new recruit, he doesn’t know how amazing Rezado-sama is yet.” An older man apologised.

“Don’t mind it. After all, we are all the same. Even though it was a little bit unsatisfying, I have enjoyed the beast hunt. You can do as you like with the female beasts.” Rezado waved his hand.

“As expected of Rezado-sama! You are very wise!” They exclaimed.

Am I simply going to stand there and watch them drag away the injured little girl ?

However, the opposite party is the same as him - humans. They were the very human beings that he had always longed to meet, longed dearly to meet. At the very least, that should have been the case.

However, if only this meeting was a more peaceful one... For example, a situation where they were farmers quietly ploughing their plantations. Karito would have been running towards them wholeheartedly, crying in delight.

Unfortunately, the people reflected in Karito's eyes were a group of madmen who massacre living beings, be they old or young, men or women, beastmen or ordinary humans.

----Who in their right mind would expose themselves to a group of such people?

"Y.O.U GUYYYYYYYYYYYYYSSSSSSSSSSSSSS!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!" A loud roar suddenly came out from the rear.

Just a moment later, the shadow of a figure flew over from the side where Karito lay hidden.

It had tremendous speed. It's dashing speed was like when one was equipped with an armor that reinforces speed, and putting all the experience they gained into the speed parameters. To be exact, it was at a speed of leaping over a distance of fifty meters within a mere five seconds to reach the area where the group of people stood.

The figure jumped over to the group and raised his right fist. The lifted fist was covered in light.

Like a killer technique from an anime; Karito had this inappropriate impression.

Returning the intruder's attack motion, the white robed man reacted first before the other soldiers could even move. As if protecting the group of men behind, he stepped forward in front of them. The action taken by this magician-like robed man was only that.

The glowing fist pierced the white robed man... Or so I thought. At least, it was what it looked like to Karito.

But, the fist didn't reach its target. The white robed man stood on his feet as if nothing happened.

The fist did not make a blow on the white robed man's body, but hit the aura around him instead.

"...Looks like there is still a beast remaining." Rezado stated coldly.

"Gu, Gaaaaaa!!?" The figure that leaped for the strike was blown backwards.

As though a demolition iron ball had collided with it, the sound of the impact reverberated several times as it bounced on the ground, finally rolling a good ten metres away.

Ten seconds haven't even passed from the time the figure jumped from Karito's side.

When at last, the figure that had been blown off to the ground wasn't moving, I was able to see the full figure of the mystery person clearly.

The real nature of the figure was a beastwoman. Ignoring the point that she had not been groomed well, she still had dazzling blonde hair that extended to her shoulders, and unexpectedly, a pair of identical dog ears of the same hair color peeked out. In addition, a slender yet splendid tail sprung out from her waist.

I felt like I recognized this silhouette. Could it be, the shadow of the person I saw for an instant when I was having a meal?

Her well endowed chest and hips were covered atrociously, only by a piece of poor, torn up cloth wrapped around it. Her masculine beauty, that seemed to be of a concentrated mix of sharpness and wilderness, was distorted in pain from the heavy blow that struck her whole body.

"Let go... Of that child...!" She grunted.

"It's wonderful, Rezado-sama! As expected of the power of the god fragment!" One of the men panted.

"I am tired of hearing this foolish flattery. Do whatever you want with this beast too." The robed man stated.

“Hehehe, I thought I had to make do with the kid, but it looks like I can make a profit out of this fellow here.” A man grinned.

All at once, the eyes of the group of men turned towards the beastwoman, glittering and smeared with lust worse than any wild animal around.

One of the men stomped onto the back of the little girl, and asked his friends.

“What should we do with this kid?”

“We have already acquired such a fine article, so that one isn’t necessary anymore. After all, a bitch that is worthy of being violated has already come out by herself.” One replied.

“That is right. I don’t have the hobby of doing it with a child either——” Another smiled.

The soldier who was stomping on the little girl’s back pulled out his longsword from his waist.

‘Stop’, Karito’s mouth moved unconsciously, and the beastwoman also cried out ‘Stop!’ in sorrow.

But, it was all for nothing. The soldier’s longsword thrust into the back of the girl without hesitation.

“RIIIIIIIINNAAAAAAAA!!!!” The woman screamed.

She tried to move towards the little girl, sluggish because of the pain. Before she could reach the little girl’s side, the group of men had already pressed her against the ground.

The longsword pierced the girl’s stomach, and physically nailed her to the ground. Fresh blood soaked the ground and spread out slowly as it oozed from the body. The man twisted his hand that was gripping onto the longsword, making the girl shriek hoarsely at the pain of the blade digging into her torso as she gasped constantly.

Karito had been watching all of this from the beginning till the end through his goggles. At the thicket where he lay hidden, Karito had witnessed everything - each and every

move of the soldier who stabbed the little girl, the expression of that very soldier at the moment of the murder.

(That man... He was laughing)

The moment he understood the meaning of it, something changed inside of Karito.

...I thought that it would be enough as long as I can meet a person. I surely did think so.

(Don't joke with me. They are crazy!)

I didn't want to admit the existence that would stab a young girl with a sword while laughing as a human being. I wouldn't consider them as one.

They were no longer human, but an existence of the worst evil, worse than a starved beast.

And, Karito possessed a way to eliminate them.

While saying so, was there a reason to not beat this bastard down to hell?

He stretched his hand to the side of his rifle that sat on the two-legged stand, and switched to an orthodox shooting position.

He held his breath after breathing out silently, letting his whole body relax. After his whole body's muscles loosened up, he fixed his muscles into that position, suppressing any slight movement that could alter his aim to the maximum.

First, I aimed at the man in the white robe. He was probably a magician of some sort. Since there's a good chance that he could cast some powerful magic here, I need to eliminate him first. It is basic strategy to eliminate an opponent that has larger firepower, like a gunman with a machine gun. I aimed the crosshair at the magician's head.

The robed magician flashed a sadistic smile as he looked at the girl writhing in agony at being pierced through by the sword. His face overlapped with the face of the bullies' leader who used to make Karito eat feces by force. Right after that, Karito flung a urinal pot to the lead bully's face, and literally crushed the bridge of his nose.

But this time, it would be destroying the head of a good-for-nothing with a lead bullet. As for the actions that he would undertake from then on, there was no hesitation, logical sense, or sense of guilt in the slightest in Karito's mind.

"Die, you fucking asshole." At the same time as he murmured the phrase in anger, he squeezed the trigger of the rifle quietly.

The recoil that penetrated his shoulder; the sound of a gunshot roaring... The magnified head of the magician exploded. As long as I took on a proper sniping posture, I didn't even need the assistance of the mark at a distance of no more than fifty metres. It was to the extent where I didn't even need the assistance of the scope.

In addition to being supported by the bipedal stand, Karito's M14EBR also uses a forehand grip and a high precision gun barrel that could increase accuracy for a short distance confrontation. Along with it was also Karito's own specially custom made enhanced armour exploding ammunition with high firepower and recoil. Inside the game, it was just a simple customization, but it was enough. With the correct handling method, it could be used to cope with any kind of situation.

I fixed my aim that has been tilted. I shot another two bullets into the chest of the standing body that has not realized it was missing its head to ensure that I made the finishing blow.

They blasted somewhere near the heart. As Karito had only ever seen the image of blood splattering inside the game, the sight of a freshly and badly damaged corpse was imprinted into his memories. Karito suppressed the strange feeling into a corner of his mind forcefully.

I moved the direction of my muzzle by a little bit, and the next target that my rifle's crosshair pointed to was the man, who has been kicking the girl, who was standing stunned, unable to comprehend what had just happened.

I aimed at his neck joint that wasn't covered by the slip-guard, and shot. After shooting open a large hole in his body, the man collapsed.

I have murdered two people today.

"Serves you right." My lips moved unconsciously.

Furthermore, I turned and readied my aim at the remaining men who surrounded the beastwoman.

On this side too, the group of men froze at their respective spots, unable to grasp the situation. Without any further hesitation, I shot another bullet. Bit by bit, I shifted my aim and mowed them down with rapid fire in semi-auto mode. The armor exploding bullets pierced their armours easily, destroying their internal organs. They fell down one after another, scattering pieces of flesh and blood from the pierced openings.

When Karito had killed all of the enemies in his sight, he raised his body quickly and attempted to approach the village. As he pressed his rifle onto his right shoulder, he dropped his waist a little bit, tilted his body forward, and began to jog. Even so, his speed was the same as a child running a short distance.

Karito was only a few meters away from the beastwoman that lay dumbfounded, also unable to comprehend the scene that had just occurred, when at that moment, another group of soldiers came running towards them.

Their hands were holding onto swords. It was very clear that they belonged to the group of men Karito had just killed from their malicious presence. Their numbers totalled to five. If they were the men's comrades, it means that they're Karito's enemies.

"What the hell are you..." Ignoring the fact that one of the men was about to say something, Karito proceed to fire.

When aiming at a moving target, one should aim for the large torso. At this short distance, Karito didn't even need to use the scope. He double tapped the trigger, and the bullet hit the middle of the man's chest exactly.

[TL: Double Tap is a shooting technique where 2 shots are fired in rapid succession at the same target]

Subsequently, at the point where only two men remained, the M14EBR ran out of bullets. He imagined a weapon change as he slung the rifle to his back without panicking or fussing, his hands unconsciously moving towards the back of his waist.

When both of his hands appeared next, he was holding onto two handguns, one each

in his hands.

They were the IMI desert eagle. Moreover, they were the best ones in their class, a .50AE model. The .05AE model has an expansion magazine that can increase the capacity of bullets loaded in it, a high precision barrel that increases accuracy, a muzzle brake that reduces recoil, and an armor piercing shell with increased recoil of customizable performance.



Originally, this setting was unachievable in the [Tactical Combat Mode], but it was not unusual for a player in mercenary mode to use two handguns, considering that there was the transfiguration of parameters, and the armours' additional effects.

It was, then again, different from the M14EBR, where its heavy gunfire sound rung out like a hammer slamming onto a tree. A huge handgun comes with a huge muzzle flash as well, and the magnum bullets show the power it deserves. The soldier's upper body leaned backwards and collapsed, as if he was hit by a home run king's invisible bat.

The last soldier was filled with horror as he watched his friends die one after another.

"HIIIIIIIIII!" He emitted a miserable scream.

Throwing away his sword, which was the only weapon protecting him, he turned his back to Karito, and ran away.

But, Karito didn't intend to let him go.

Aren't you as guilty as well? The traces of blood left on his sword were the best evidence.

"This insect is too selfish." Karito mumbled.

He raised the desert eagle in his right hand single-handedly, and fired at the escaping soldier. A hole the size of a table tennis ball formed in his back. Leaning forward, the soldier fell face first. There was no sign of him waking up. There was no sign of life in him as well.

I scanned the whole area while taking a pose where I can shoot with a desert eagle anytime. There doesn't seem to be any ambushing troops within the scan range.

The only people alive were Karito, the beastwoman, and one other person.

"No, don't, Rina! You musn't die! Stay with me!" The beastwoman finally pulled herself together, and clung onto the little girl.

She pulled out the longsword from her little body, and embraced her. She suppressed the intense bleeding from her stomach, but no matter how you looked at it, it was a fatal wound.

Rina seemed to be the name of that little girl. Karito then noticed that he was able to understand the words that the beastwoman said. It might be because of the effect of the standardized translation function inside.

Unable to leave them alone, he approached the mortally injured girl called Rina, wondering if he could offer any first aid. Then, he did a double take.

Her eyes had already lost their glimmer, and her face was turning greenish-blue from the loss of blood. On top of her head was a floating clock shaped icon.

To the players of , it was a familiar icon. It was the pie chart that indicates the time one has remaining, and it would gradually decrease over time. He shouldn't delay things any longer.

"Get out of the way!" He yelled urgently.

"Wha... What are you gonna do!?" The woman glared.

"Listen up, I will take a look at this child!" He stated fiercely.

He tore the girl from the beastwoman by force, and kneeled beside Rina while

choosing from the equipment list.

Since time was precious at the moment, he didn't give an explanation. Once Karito found the item he wanted, he materialized it immediately.

What appeared was a pencil-shaped syringe replacing his handgun. Karito pressed the sharp point at the back of her neck, and pushed the button on the opposite side with his thumb. *Pssh* The sound of compressed air could be heard, and the medical solution flowed into the girl's body.

It was now Karito's turn to be pushed away by the beastwoman. His collar was grabbed and raised with a strength that he couldn't imagine coming from the beastwoman's small hand. Her eyes blazed with fury as she glared at Karito angrily.

"What did you do to Rina?!" She demanded.

"Medicine, I only injected her with medicine!" Karito replied hastily.

Right after that, the girl's eyes that were closed the entire time fluttered open. While making questioning sounds, she raised her body easily. Her face's complexion had returned.

Understanding that it turned out well, Karito's stiff body slouched in relief. On the other hand, the beastwoman froze again from surprise when she saw that Rina, who had been on the verge of dying moments ago, had regained her health. However, her hand was still gripping onto Karito's collar.

"Eh? H-Huh? I don't feel anymore pain?" Rina stated in confusion.

"Ri-Riina!? Why!? A... A-Are you really alright!?" The beastwoman yelped.

"Y-Yes. I don't understand it well, but I'm probably fine.... I think." The girl replied hesitantly.

"Hey, hey, hey! Hey you! What exactly have you done to Rina!" The beastwoman turned to Karito agitatedly.

"I gave her some resurrection medicine. It was nearly past the time limit, but looks like I made it in time somehow..." Karito sighed.

The stopwatch icon that floated on top of the girl's head indicated the time limit until the resurrection medicine given would have an effect. Resurrection medicine was an item that would immediately revive the player when his Life Point reaches zero, with the exception of instant death or damage dealt to a certain level in a given period of time. It was an indispensable existence when you play.

Anyway, the beastwoman's tears of gratitude kept flowing out from the joy of Rina reviving from the brink of death.

While rubbing her red-hot swollen eyes, the beastwoman turned to face Karito while securing the girl in her arms several minutes later.

"I give my thanks to you from the bottom of my heart for saving Rina... By the way, who are you?"

Now then, how should I answer this?

Karito didn't know how to reply.

CHAPTER 2

STRAIGHT STORY

In the end, their self-introductions were done along the way as they left the annihilated village since there was no guarantee that the comrades of those soldiers wouldn't come rushing back if they had stayed in that place.

Even though the beastwoman terribly regretted abandoning the village as well as the corpses of the villagers whom she had spent all her life together with, when Karito explained that the cohorts of the soldiers whom he had slaughtered might come looking for their group members who haven't returned, she immediately agreed.

The girl, who was called Rina by the beastwoman, was being carried on her back. Even after she had recovered from the abdominal injury with the help of the revival medicine, she was still exhausted physically and mentally from witnessing the people who were close to her being massacred right in front of her eyes. In addition, she, herself, was almost killed too. This experience was simply too cruel for a girl this young.

"I haven't given my name to the savior of my younger sister yet, have I? I'm Reona. Please treat me well." The beastwoman named Reona skillfully switched the hand which was supporting Rina, who was sleeping at her back to her left hand, and held out her right hand to Karito, who was walking on her right side.

There were several saddled horses tied to the fences along the village that looked like they belong to the soldiers. However, Reona seemed to have no experience in horseriding, needless to mention Karito. Presently, they were walking along a highway, opposite from the direction that Karito had come from.

Karito removed his thick gloves in a hurry, and grasped Reona's right hand tightly with a trembling hand. Reona's hand was a little rough from all the outside activities, yet it was still slender enough as a woman's hand... Above all, it was warm.

It wasn't a dream or a hallucination; it was the feeling of a genuine human's skin.

As I shook hands and talked with her like this, I'm certain that this was reality. When

I had realised that, the corners of my eyes, and my nose turned hot immediately.

“Wait, why are you bursting into tears all of sudden?!” Reona exclaimed.

“So-Sorry, but it has been a really long time since I’ve come into contact with someone else like this... Urgh...” Karito sniffled.

“I never thought that you’d be someone who was easily moved to tears like this...” The beastwoman snorted.

When looking at Karito’s current figure; first of all, while he has a large build, his muscles had tightened up his whole body. His body that looked lean at a glance was actually quite muscular, and the reinforced armor with a forest camouflage pattern covered his body like a space suit used for outer space work. Except for his right hand, for which he had just taken off his glove, the only exposed part of his body was only his neck and above.

His overall face was somewhat sharp, with short black hair. His hair and eyes were black, typical racial characteristics of the Japanese. Karito’s face was nicely arranged in its own way, although seven out of ten people would have the impression that he looked unsociable. At a glance, he had features that made it hard for others to approach him.

In reality, Karito’s face and stature back on earth was quite dull. However, inside the game, it was natural to change one’s appearance to one’s liking. Hence, this figure was the real Karito now, so he had no choice but to accept it.

At first he felt uncomfortable with the appearance of his avatar in the game that became his very own self, but, after spending a year with this body, he had become used to it despite his dislike.

Humans are quick to adapt after all.

“In the first place, it has been several years since I’ve held a girl’s hand after all...” Karito mumbled.

“Ah, I would be grateful if you could release my hand soon? It is quite difficult to carry her with one hand.” Reona said.

“Uoh! So-Sorry! But, you shouldn’t strain yourself too much. After all, you are still injured by the blow before. It is okay to let me carry the child.” Karito offered.

Remembering the scene where she was blown to the ground in a way flashier than a Kung Fu movie, Karito called out to her, worried about Reona from the bottom of his heart.

“You don’t need to worry about it. I can’t make my benefactor do such a thing, and Rina is my younger sister after all.” Reona waved it off.

“Is that so... My name is Watarai Karito. Please treat me kindly too.” The man stated.

“Watarai Karito? What a strange name.” The beastwoman commented.

“Ah, more or less... Watarai is my surname, and Karito is my given name.” He explained.

“Ah, so it’s like that. But, it’s quite unusual around this area. Although, I’ve heard that humans with surnames live in the imperial capital, or in the surrounding regions nearby. Did Karito come from around there?” Reona asked.

“No, it wasn’t like that. In the first place, I don’t even know anything about this world at all.” Karito sighed.

“...It seems like there are a lot of complicated circumstances.” Reona replied.

“Exactly. It was extremely confusing, or I should say everything was lacking in information? I wasn’t even sure why I was here in the first place. I was simply in the dark.” Karito explained.

“Well, don’t worry about the details. Besides, it will not change the fact that Karito is Rina’s and my benefactor.” The beastwoman huffed.

“Well, I’m saved. To be frank, I don’t know how to begin explaining it... However, are you really okay? You’ve just experienced something like that, so don’t force yourself. If you like, you can depend on me.” The man stated.

“...Thank you. Unlike your face, you’re actually very kind.” Reona smiled.

Unbefitting of my face, huh. Karito revealed a bitter smile, remembering his own face

back on earth.

“It’s not like that. I only wanted an opportunity to talk as much as possible. Because I have always been alone until now... It’s amazing to think that it’s fun to just talk like this for the first time.” He stopped talking, and stared at Rina’s sleeping face leaning against her elder sister’s back alternately. “Family... I can understand the feeling someone important being robbed as well.”

“Is Karito’s family also...?” The beastwoman asked hesitantly.

“It was an accident. They had a frontal collision with a car driven by a drunkard. It’s a common story. Furthermore, the other driver also died together with them, so I couldn’t even have my revenge.”

Ever since the bloodbath with the bullies, the sadness of losing his parents swelled up in his stomach. On top of losing the object of his revenge, the fury of losing his destination might have been the reason for Karito to spontaneously fight back against those people in the act of persecuting himself in the process, or so Karito analysed.

At that point, a slight discrepancy of understanding was born between Karito and Reona. What Reona had in mind as a car was a horse-drawn carriage, and that a frontal crash of two carriages seemed unreal. Reona puzzled over Karito’s words, only catching the outline of the matter through the nuance of the conversation so far.

In other words, this youth who was her benefactor had lost someone important to him in unreasonable ways too.

“You have your own hardships too, huh...” Reona sighed.

“It’s a story that happens all the time. In fact, this kind of story was all over the place... But, is your body really alright? You have been attacked by such force that it wouldn’t be strange to die if you were reckless...” I knew it was impolite, but I scanned Reona’s body from the top to the bottom.

There were scratches here and there, but it is such a wonder that there are no serious wounds like bruises or bone fractures in sight.

“Of course! No matter what, I am of the Garm tribe, a proud daughter of Fenrir! Before, I wasn’t able to move for a little bit when I completely received the strike, but our body

isn't weak like a human's."

Garm means hunting hound, and that Fenrir is from the Norse mythology? Karito searched out the relevant articles from the sea of material that he had gathered widely from the net.

Reona stuck out her chest proudly while carrying her little sister. Her breasts, which were only wrapped with a piece of frayed, ragged cloth, shook a little.

Counting off the Karito who spends 70% of his life one-sidedly as a shut-in, and the fact that a few moments ago, he had just planned and executed the killing of a few people, Karito is an extremely healthy young man. He was unable to tear his eyes away from the voluptuous swelling which shakes with even the slightest movement once he set his eyes on it.

Looking from close proximity, it is clear that the ragged cloth couldn't completely cover her breasts. It only covered the top half of those rocket shaped swellings, whereas the bottom half was left exposed to the outside air and Karito's sight, revealing healthily tanned wheat-coloured skin.



Her lower body was wrapped with a similar ragged cloth too. The gray colored cloth didn't have enough width, and only covered till the joint of her thigh and the root of her golden tail. Whenever she took a step, the most important triangle zone almost peeped out frequently. Karito's line of sight too, frequently went there. It was certainly a region of fascinating allure.

And because he was formerly a bullied child, for Karito who didn't even experience a proper conversation with a female classmate, he didn't have the skills to enjoy the body of a beautiful girl with his eyes without being noticed by the other party.

(This... If I leaned back a little bit, I can absolutely see the completely exposed bum from the back... Rather, the underside of her breasts are unbelievable. They don't hang down at all, and the tip points up proudly. It's the first time I've seen something like this other than inside an eroge. What on earth is packed inside that?)

"Despite your curt face, you are unexpectedly easy to understand. Your eyes are becoming bloodshot." Reona said, amused.

"Yes!" Karito yelled, embarrassed.

Breasts! Breasts! Her breasts, buttocks and thighs! Karito was desperately trying to keep himself from cheering from the bottom of his heart, but it seemed that it was pretty obvious from the point of view of the side who was being stared at.

With regards to the frozen Karito, Reona, who had made the opposite gender embarrassed from their own passionate stare, did not attempt to slap him, nor did she shake from agitation. Instead, she smiled and prodded him with her elbow jokingly.

"Rest assured that I have always been stared at like that, and it's my nature for it to not feel bad at being stared this way. Because from the perspective of the males around me, it would mean that I am an excellent woman. In fact, it feels like something I can be proud of."

"Isn't this a premeditated crime! Is there no better decent clothing out there!? To be honest, with common sense, that style of appearance is too much of a temptation to the eyes!" Karito yelled.

"Eh, I like it this way since it's easy to move in. Plus, it's a tradition of the Garm tribe to celebrate the [Moonlight Night ceremony] where men and women dress alike. By

the way, what do you mean by [common sense]?” Reona asked.

[TLC:the author is trying to say that Reona is asking Karito the meaning of common sense. It seems such words didn't exist in Garm tribe]

With the level of this civilization, it can't be helped... No, it isn't something that can't be helped, but let's just say that I could understand it.

“By the way, what is this [Moonlight Night Ceremony]?” Karito questioned.

“In the Gram tribe, when we reach 12 years old, on the first night of the full moon, our on other set of ears and tail that are the characteristic of the tribe, as well as our bodies, will grow quickly. We name such a day as the [Moonlight Night Ceremony]. If the tail and ears have grown safely, then that person will be treated the same as an adult from that day on.” The beastwoman explained.

“Hm? Is the reason why the animal ears and tails hasn't grown on Rina because she isn't 12 years old yet?” Karito asked.

“That is right. She is 11 years old this year.” Reona nodded.

“I see, so if she reaches 12 years old, she will have a nice body and animal ears huh...” He looked at Reona's figure once again.

He was looking forward to it. He was unusually looking forward to the future!

“I will say it first. Even though you are our benefactor, I will not let you make a move on Rina!” Reona glared at him.

“Sorry, I will restrain myself.” Karito apologised immediately.

“You really are a strange fellow.” She stared at me strangely.

Taking into account my behaviour, just as what Reona had said... Being rather bipolar, no, am I really kind of emotionally unstable?

“Sorry, I was too happy to have someone to talk to that I got too excited...” Karito sighed.

I calmed myself down. I took a deep breath while looking at the items list, choosing a plastic bottle of mineral water (Effect : small stamina recovery), and thought to cool my head with it.

On other hand, Reona opened her eyes wide as she looked at the bottle-like container that appeared out of nowhere suddenly.



[Reona POV]

(He has an iron stick that I've never seen before... This human is truly weird.)

However, he doesn't look like a bad human. Even though he was weird, at least he was much better than those humans who came to attack, and annihilated the people from the village where I was born in.

(Those fellows were probably from the Alwina Kingdom. But. why were they here...?)

The village that I was born and raised in belonged to the allied nations of Belcania. Belcania's neighbouring nation was once a large country that took pride in their glory, the Alwina Kingdom.

Their history began from long ago... They ruled over the continent until 1000 years ago, but it was a story from the old days. Majority of their territory was divided into several countries, while the mere leftover pieces of land and political powers slowly dwindled from the siege of surrounding countries. At the very end, when a century passed, their long history was marked to an end. It had transformed into the descriptions of ruined countries that existed only in history books.

It was probably around 3 years ago when the situation completely changed. A new leader reigned over the royal family of the Alwina Kingdom that was on the verge of their downfall.

Reona also didn't know about the details. Since she was young, aside from the village that she was born to and raised in, and the faraway Belcania Allied Nations where her father, who was a soldier, took her to, she didn't know of any other world outside of her village. Listening to the small talk of her father who only returns to the village once every several months with a merchant who comes to trade was her only way to learn

about the outside world. For Reona, talk about the situation of another country was like something from a different world.

However, the new leader was a wielder of great power, an existence loved by the spirits. She remembered her father telling her that he had annihilated multiple nations' forces that had gathered near the border, completely erasing the country called Alwina alone.

It was said that even the attack of magicians which were protected by the spirits more than a thousand times would not reach him, and no magic had ever had any effect on him. Even with tens of thousands of soldiers as his opponent, they couldn't even taint his snow white clothes with a speck of dirt.

(Now that you mention it, that magician, too, is... But, it was probably someone else. Such a terrible monster wouldn't be killed so easily like that.)

Reona's father taught her how to fight with bare hands, concentrating the spirits from the surrounding areas to her fist to strike. However, the weak point of this fighting style was that when countered by a stronger magical attack, it will be neutralized. But, that point applies to all spirit magic as well.

The one attack that she had put all her strength into was blocked because the magician that visualized a glowing white figure was manipulating a concentrated and enormous magic power. But, it wasn't on the level from the story I was told.... I think.

After all, such an existence didn't have any reason to bring only a mere 10 underlings to attack a remote village like this.

(Father may know something.)

It would be far to reach the city where the troops that father commands were stationed, but with the physical strength and legs of this queer benefactor, and mine, we could arrive there earlier than expected.

I need to report on the matters that have happened to father. It was the duty of those who survived. At the very least, it was one way of performing the funerals for those villagers who were murdered, or so Reona thought.

But, Reona didn't know.

Alwina kingdom had declared war against each of the neighboring kingdoms, and it had started with the invasion of the Belcania allied nations.

Her father and his subordinates had left the city where they had been stationed at for scouting.

Alwina Kingdom's new leader were twin brothers, and that they have joined the invasion army.

There was no way for Reona and Rina, as well as Karito, to know this.

Just yet.



“Impossible, it is impossible! Impossible, impossible...!!”

It was evening, and most of the houses in the village have turned into ashes, and the wreckage turned black. A man with a splendid beard past his middle age, who looked like a commanding officer, repeated the words in a daze.

The man's armor which has been polished until it was shining, and the mantle that was richly embroidered with golden threads trembled a little bit. His whole body shook, as if a local earthquake was happening right beneath his feet.

The expression plastered on his face wasn't one of anger due to the murder of his subordinates. It was one of utter fear for the looming future connoted by the dead body of the white robed magician lying amongst the corpses of the villagers and soldiers.

It was all fine, until they had dispatched the imperial knights to call back Rezado, the white robed magician and his subordinates, who sneaked out of the encampment without permission.

The Dragon Riders rushed back in a hurry to report, and so, he brought some soldiers under his command to rush there to take a look the scene from the report with his own eyes. The scene that flashed right in front of him was nothing but a nightmare.

Even with the saying that the beastmen were blessed with physical ability higher than human beings, and a unique spirit magic, it was still unthinkable for Rezado to be

killed in this remote village which looked like it only had a population of around a hundred people.

After all, Rezado was the current leader of the Alwina Kingdom. He was the younger brother who was personally called by the name [Spirit God].

With regards to the current invasion, Rezado was granted a post directly from the most prominent leader of the Kingdom, his very own brother, as the supreme commander of the invasion troops. But in reality, the officers assigned under him were the ones carrying out the role as commanders, as he drags around several soldiers to do whatever he pleases. It was common for him to massacre the people of the region he invaded. There was even a time where he annihilated a whole settlement with magic.

The actual role for Rezado was to act as artillery on the battlefield. Although he is still incomparable to his elder twin, the scale of his usable magic power is still worth that of a hundred common magicians. With such enormous magic power, he could easily blow away a strong fort or two while humming away. He, himself, is a tactical weapon with spirit magic.

With a background matching his ability, there was no one who could stop his terrible conduct aside from his older brother. In places of entertainment, on the way here, he had already destroyed three villages, and who knows how many people and residents have been killed by his hands.

...However, describing him as [was] is more accurate.

Except for a few limited exceptions, there were no dead people who can use magic.

Rezado, having a body that could manipulate spirit magic on a large scale, had formed an armour that continuously evolves itself using the powers of the spirits. It was the very essence which created the illusion of a white aura surrounding him all the time.

Every existence in this world, be they big or small, is granted a divine protection by the spirits. There are no human beings who can have exist in this world without the divine protection. The armor spirit that Rezado and his twin older brother have were armours that unconsciously use a large number of spirits, which as a result, takes the form of a white aura that can be seen even with the naked eye. It is an armour that repels away all harm meant for its wearer, including the interferences of those with

divine protection.

It is truly an invincible defense, rather, it should have been so.

But this was just past tense now.

“This will not do! At this rate, I will be accused and get executed!” The man panicked.

By all means, it was natural to tremble in fear towards an existence that could pierce through Rezado’s spirit armour, which was said to be able to block off every possible attack. He truly was a person to be cautious of.

Nonetheless, this commander was just a small fry. The first thing that came to his mind was the problem of responsibility over the brutal killing of the leader’s brother, and the way of securing his own position from it.

“Track down that bastard who killed Rezado-sama! Mobilize the sky cavalry too! They can’t have gone too far yet!” The man ordered.

The sky cavalry comprises of mythical beasts - including Dragons, Griffons, and Hippogryphs - and of soldiers who ride on the beasts. Their duties are to execute reconnaissance from the sky, transport a number of soldiers, goods, and supplies, relaying messages, surprise attacks, and many others. The Imperial Knights were included in this too.

Aside from a number of dragons that have magical breaths, the rest of the mythical beasts have no way to execute a long distance attack. That results in those riding the mythical beasts to be magicians who could use spirit magic, or soldiers equipped with bombs and explosive bottles most of the time.

“General, there are two sets of footprints that continue to the west. They are probably survivors of the village.” A soldier reported.

“It must be those guys! Chase them immediately!” The commander demanded.

If he could at least bring back the head of the perpetrator, he could restore the situation. After all, the current king of the Alwina Kingdom is very strict towards useless subordinates and demi-humans.

“Furthermore, mobilize one battalion to hunt the target! Everyone else is to wait at the encampment until we come back!” The commander decreed.

One battalion from the Alwina Kingdom consists of 600 people. The soldiers whom he had brought here numbered 150. The total number of soldiers who were chasing down the target is 750.

Among the mobilized soldiers, almost all of them was infantries equipped with swords and spears, and cavalry soldiers. There were also few bowmen and magicians assigned to the troops to cope with long distance attacks as well.

“Chase them with full speed! We must take the head of the criminal who has murdered Rezado-sama, or the King himself will cut our necks instead!” The commander shouted.

“What do we do with the bodies here?” A soldier asked.

“Leave the corpses, except for the body of Rezado-sama! Time is precious!” The commander declared.



“The people of Alwina have left the village. It seems like they have moved to chase something.”

Shadows hid behind the forest, watching over the soldiers.

All of them were robust beastmen. They had steel shoulder pads engraved with markings of the groups they belong to.

The beastmen, besides their basic physical strength, have five senses, in particular, their sense of smell, hearing, and eyesight, that were much sharper than human beings. That is why they have high aptitude as scouts. They were the soldiers of the Belcania Allied Nations that were sent to scout the Alwina invasion army.

Of course, human beings were mixed in this group as well. Riding horses, they had waited away from the site.

“What should we do, Captain?” A subordinate called to the wolfman who stood out

even among these beastmen with robust bodies.

With hair like silver itself twisting against each other, the man had animal ears and a tail of the same color as his hair, attracting the eyes of people.

His gaze that was as sharp as a blade were nailed onto the numerous corpses that were tossed behind. His canines that could be compared to the sharpness of a famous sword, peeped out from the corner of his mouth as he gritted his teeth, blood dripping from his fist as he curled it tightly. His fist was clenched so hard that the nails tore into his skin.

“...We will split into two groups. Half of the group will stand watch to the movements of their camp. The other half will go with me to stalk the chasing corps. If possible, we will go and protect their target. It is possible that we might come across survivors of the village.”

“Understood... Captain. Your daughters will surely live. They are your children after all.” One soldier stated.

“...Sorry.” Another soldier said.

The men disappeared into the darkness, performing their respective duties individually.

CHAPTER 3

THE HUNTED

“-in other words, the Aruwina Kingdom is a country where only ordinary humans live in, and they are treating beastmen like Reona and Rina, and other people of different races as slaves?” Karito asked.

“(Chomp Chomp!) That’s right. From the King to the soldiers, all of them think that it is obvious to keep and raise beastmen like us as pets since we’re not different from beasts... (Nom Nom Nom) My father had always complained that they are too old-fashioned... (Nom Nom Nom!) Beastmen and other subspecies being slaves are already old stories from several hundred years ago.” Reona explained.

“Is it different now?” Karito questioned.

“(Nom nom...) Fuuh ah. I have heard the story that at that time, various beastmen slaves joined hands with some humans who went against the Alwina Kingdom and revolted all at once. Even though the physical strength of the beastman and demi-humans was much more than the humans’ at that time, they weren’t clever enough as their technology didn’t develop adequately. But, with the cooperation with human beings from the rebel army, they were taught how to fight using their skills and heads.” Reona elaborated. “It is not unusual for beastmen to marry the Royal Family now, and there are a lot of countries with beastmen as their kings as well. In any case, I don’t know much about other countries. Even the story I just told you was taught by my father.”

Several hours had passed since we escaped from the annihilated village. The sun had already completely set on the horizon.

The night’s darkness of this world without streets is so dark that it can’t be compared to the darkness of any downtown back on Earth. Every time night came, it made Karito feel like the world had totally sunk into darkness.

On the other hand, when you look up into the night sky, the number of shining stars in this world was several times more than that of Earth’s. It can’t even be compared to the starlight from planetariums.

The three of us decided to spend the night in the forest near the road. We dug a shallow hole and made an open air fire with tree branches and leaves from the forest. We could scatter the smoke and control the light as well. It's one way that I learnt of when I checked the net about survival.

"Still, this is delicious. Even though the taste is rather strong, it is my first time eating this sort of food! Hey, Rina! You should eat without reserve. Because you bled a lot, you need to eat a lot of meat to replenish it." Reona stated.

"Ye-Yes, I understand. However, this bag sure is unusual..." Rina was looking at the object (retort pouch) in her hand with bewilderment and curiosity.

She had regained her consciousness on her older sister's back, just a while before Karito and Reona were deciding to camp out. Her condition was so good that the fact that her body and internal organs had been pierced by a blade seemed like a lie.

When she first woke up, she lost the memories she had before she lost consciousness (her village being overrun by Aruwina Kingdom's soldiers, and herself getting stabbed), but after a brief moment, she started to panic before she finally calmed down with the help of Reona. She hugged her younger sister who was screaming and thrashing violently at her chest, and kept stroking her head until she had finally quietened down.

When Rina had calmed down, Karito introduced himself to her. Looking at his unfamiliar appearance (black hair and eyes), unfamiliar figure (special armor), and unfamiliar weapon (M14EBR), Rina, who was only a girl from a remote village, was surprised to encounter an unknown existence like Karito at the beginning. But, because of her older sister's persuasion, he was able to avoid leaving a negative impression somehow.

Still, the decisive factor of persuasion was the phrase, 'her and her elder sister's saviour'.

It was at that moment when the two sisters who had just survived the slaughter, finished embracing each other while confirming their familial love for each other.

"—GRowwlll" The sound of a stomach growling, similar to the cry of small animal sounded at the same time.

One was blushing, while another one put her hand on the source of the sound and said [when you feel relieved you become hungry]. He doesn't even have to say who it was.

That was why, after they had collected the dried wood and started the fire, the three of them ate dinner while surrounding the open air fire.

Reona and Rina didn't have anything besides the clothes they wear on their bodies. They couldn't have taken any baggage while escaping from their village, which resulted in not having any food at all. It can't be helped since their house was burned down, and they had rushed out, not knowing when the pursuers would come.

The rations (combat ration) that those two ate were the rations from the self defense force which Karito had dished out.

They were puzzled at first, looking at the metal like bag (retort pouch), but as soon as they had eaten one piece of the hamburger steak, they seemed to be pleased. The two had carried the spoon to their mouths without stopping.

"Another serving!" Reona demanded.

"O-Onee-chan! He has already helped us with much effort and shared precious food to us! You musn't be unreasonable." Reona, who was energetically asking for a second helping, was stopped by Rina immediately.

Being pointed out by her younger sister, the tension immediately reversed. Her animal ears and tail hung down as though she was feeling sorry.

"Ah, I'm sorry Karito, for me to ask for such luxury..." The beastwoman apologised.

"You don't have to worry about such a thing. Because there is a lot, you can eat as much as you want." The male smiled.

Anyhow, he can literally provide them with an infinite amount. Having been in contact with friendly people after the span of a year, Karito was very generous and easy going...

...Is it okay for a wolfman to eat something that's mixed with onions? But, if you remove the animal ears and tail, they look like a human, so it probably was okay, or so

he thought. If it was no good, he would have to sincerely apologize. If he wasn't mistaken, chocolate is also not good.

As if emphasizing Reona's pleasant mood from being able to get a second serving of delicious food, the tail sprouting from her back swayed left and right. Looking at this, Karito smiled wryly as he carried a spoon of stewed pork and potato (a kind of military ration from the French Army) to his mouth, and looked up. Before he knew it, the face of Reona was right in front of him. Startled, Karito bent backwards.

Drool was coming out from her mouth. Her sight was set on the stew. The speed of her wagging tail was much faster than before. It was like a propeller or an electric fan.



What she was hoping for, the drool dripping from her lips already said it.

“...Do you want a bite?” Karito sighed.

“Is it okay?!” Reona yelped in excitement.

“Onee-chan!” Rina uttered exasperatedly.

He couldn't have betrayed her expectations after being shown such an expression. Judging from Rina's behavior, unbefitting of someone of a tender age, she seemed to act as a stopper for her wild elder sister.

Reona leaned to him with eyes was full of expectation. Her big breasts and deep cleavage shook slightly from the movement. Wondering if it was her aim or not (probably the latter), but having such goods brought near to him... It was like poison to Karito's eyes.

Whatever it is, it was touching Karito. She pressed it to his arm with all her strength. However, the softness and the warmth of her body wasn't transmitted to Karito through his armour plate that could deflect a rifle bullet.

(It would be better to make it thinner...)

By reflex, even Karito had his own share of sexual desire despite its disappointing extent.

As he was trying hard not to show his regrets through his face and words, he took the spoon to Reona's mouth. Without hesitating, Reona tasted the tip of the spoon that was being held out.

It was an indirect kiss, the thought flashed for a moment in his mind. Even though he was suddenly hugged by a beautiful girl, all the same, Karito wasn't that inexperienced to be excited over an action of that level. In the first place, not to mention pretty girls, isn't such a reaction meaningless

“Delicious! Another bite!” Reona exclaimed.

“It looks like a CM of green juice.”

Reona tilted her head to one side as if she wanted to ask what was green juice. My smile collapsed when I held out another spoon for her to take another bite. Her animal ears were twitching up and down happily, as if showing Reona's state of mind to her surroundings.

"Onee-chan is so embarrassing..." Rina sighed.

"I can't help it! It's so delicious! Hey, Rina, you take a bite too." Reona suggested.

"Fue... A-An ~ " Rina opened her mouth.

She thought about it for a moment before responding in the end. It looks like she was interested in the stew as well.

Reona turned her back to Karito and lowered her back to assume a crawling position, and held out the spoon to feed the stew to her younger sister. Karito was watching them warmly, but...

At that moment, he noticed something.

There was only a small cloth that was not even close to covering Reona's waist. As result of her nearly crawling posture, the important part of the women which originally had to be hidden was revealed to the fullest.

"Wait, I can see it , I can see it! Rather, isn't she making fun of me?!)"

The cloth that was covering her secret region wasn't inferior to those that covered her breasts. The white cloth's level of design was much better than the rag cloth that was used to wrap around her breasts.

...Gah, the piece of cloth that acts as underwear was considerably thin, and it was tightly digging into Reona's sensual body. Thanks to that, it went beyond the description of being sexy to the point that it can only be expressed as erotic. The slit line was completely clear. This sexiness can easily beat that of gravure idols.

On top of that, her tail was shaking like those classic hypnosis methods using a string on five yen coin. As he was looking at it, Karito's reason felt like it was being snatched away little by little. Is she trying to tempt me? God damn it! She's trying to tempt me today?!

The spoon being taken away by Reona has left Karito's right hand empty. That very right hand was unsteadily reaching toward Reona's buttocks...

Just another five cm until her buttocks. It was at moment that Reona turned to face Karito. The figure of Karito stretching his hands halfway towards her was captured in her eyes.

"What are you doing?" Reona asked.

"Waa?! I didn't do anything?!" Karito fumbled.

He tried to pull himself back, but it was already too late.

Reona recollected the place of Karito's hands and her posture from before, and smiled complacently, figuring out what had Karito intended to do...

The smile isn't like the smile of pure joy when she tasted a dish from another world, but of that like a succubus trying to tease him.

"Kukuku, if my benefactor wishes to, I will let you touch my ass once, twice, or as many times as you want, but it should be done in secret, okay?" Reona continued smiling.

"...Forgive me. Please let me in on such a thing some other time." Karito apologised.

"I am looking forward to it." Reona smiled.

"Ah, Onee-chan is too shameful..." Rina blushed.

As expected, it was impossible to do sexual things openly in front of the young girl (Rina), so I would have to endure it. But, since I have made the promise, if there is take two, I will take the opportunity.

Karito thought that Reona was like those voluptuous Onee-san character who makes fun of the MC in eroge.

The image of him embracing Rina was overturned soon.

"However, Karito... You truly are a strange fellow." Reona stated.

The moment he retracted his hand that was stretched out to her raw plump ass before, he tried to avert his eyes from embarrassment. His ears reacted to the slightest sound, so at the very least he could turn to look at Reona once again.

And what Karito witnessed was the loveliness that teased a naive young guy, her beautiful face which gave off a unique eloquence that would not let the partner feel discomfort, for a moment, that face was covered in melancholy.

When Reona noticed that Karito was looking at her again, she immediately returned to her smiling face...

Not having the courage to closely examine the nature of the gloomy feeling that crossed her face in that moment, Karito could only go along with her smile, before looking down to the stew in his hands.

“That reminds me, how old are you, Reona?” Karito asked.

“I’m 15 years old this year.” The beastwoman replied.

“You are younger than me?! It is a foul play to be this erotic this young! Rather, I thought you were older than me!” Karito complained.

“Erm, how old are you, Karito?” Reona asked.

“19... No, a year has passed since I came here, so I will be 20.” Karito answered.

“Eh, is that so? You don’t really..... Nn?” Reona looked up suddenly.

Her animal ears twitched a little, as if trying to find something.

“Is there something wrong?” Karito questioned.

“Onee-chan?” Rina looked worried.

“I heard something just now. It was the cry of a beast... There is the voice of a human too!”

“A pursuer!” Karito frowned.

He covered the fire in the hole with the soil that he dug out immediately to put it out. The figures of the three were surrounded by darkness. Moonlight didn't reach them much due to the trees' thick branches, and the leaves growing on them.

Karito listened carefully while equipping his M14EBR. The silence spread, making the world feel like it had stopped moving. Only the sound of the leaves rustling in the wind could be heard.

He looked around him hard for the figures of people, but he couldn't find any... That was what he would like to say, but when being cautious like this, even the silhouettes of trees and bushes would look suspicious in the dark. It's bad for his heart. In particular, Rina was terribly scared. Even though Karito couldn't see her face clearly in the dark, he could sense the fear coming out from her clearly.

Because he couldn't understand this turn of events, he asked the instigator of the situation in a low voice.

"Was it really the voice of people?"

"Don't make light of the sharp ears of an adult of the Garm tribe... However, regarding the direction to where I have heard the voice, it seems to have come from the sky..." Reona elaborated.

"...Sky?" Karito asked.

Reona looked up towards the night sky. Following her, Karito looked up as well. For a while, nothing seemed to change. The pitch black sky was still filled with bright stars.

But, he didn't have time to admire it this time. Karito equipped his goggles and switched it to the infrared night vision mode. The world in his field of vision that was shrouded in darkness changed into colors consisting of red, purple, blue, and black. By looking at the different colors of heat that each object has, it allowed Karito to see in the darkness.

In the sky where even starlight disappears as if it was swiped with ink, a pink silhouette floated.

From the looks of it, it seemed like a person who was sitting on a four legged beast with wings spreading out from its back. The distorted large silhouette swooped down

towards Karito and his group. He realized it was because the human mounting the beast released his hands from the reins, and projected his right hand.

“Enemy attack!!” Karito yelled.

The warning and the jockey’s right hand twitched at the same time. A light ball swept over the tip of the trees, hitting the ground several meters behind Karito, and an explosion occurred. The three people flew from the impact and fell down.

A wild shierk resounded.

“Hoatchaa!?”

Unfortunately, the place where Karito fell onto was the place where he had put out the open air fire just now. It’s only been a while since it was put out, so the soil was still extremely hot. The armor Karito had equipped didn’t have any resistance towards fire damage, and thus, he was burnt.

He jumped up immediately, patting the area around his stomach to cool off the burned area. At that moment, a large shadow passed by overhead. Reona saw through the real nature of that being at once. The Garm tribe didn’t only have sharp ears, but also sharp eyes that see well in the night.

“That was a Griffon! It’s the pursuers from Aruwina Kingdom!” Reona exclaimed.

“It’s slightly unexpected for them to chase from the sky...! Do you know what kind of attack was it just now?” Karito asked urgently.

“It’s the Magic Cannon! You will turn into meat paste if you receive a direct hit, so be careful!” The beastwoman warned.

He looked at the bomb’s trace of impact. Judging from the scale of the explosion and the indentation on the ground, its power seems equal to a small sized mortar, or an RPG (Anti-Tank Rocket).

Unlike an ordinary cannonball, it didn’t shatter to pieces when it exploded. Even though he didn’t have to worry about being damaged by the shattered pieces, it was still dangerous. With this power, it seems like it will not be a good idea to use the surrounding trees as a shield. You would either be pulverized together with the trees,

or be ripped apart by the exploding woodchips.

The griffon that had just left turned back and started attacking again.

“Reona, bring Rina to the other side. Lower your stance and escape quickly!” Karito ordered.

“What do you intend to do, Karito!?” Reona demanded.

“I’m going to fight back!” The man stated.

As he took some distance away from the sisters, he made a diversion shot with his M14. He intended to draw the attention of the griffon rider with this. By removing the silencer, the firing flame (muzzle flash) of a large diameter rifle stood out in the darkness. As expected, the rider turned the head of the griffon towards Karito who was visible from firing flame.

This was fine. Karito thrust one knee out and shifted to a shooting in the kneeling position. He selected full auto on his M14EBR, and aligned to the griffon’s silhouette that grew bigger over time.

Simultaneously, as he stopped his breathing for a moment, he made the shot. He suppressed the gun that was moving intensely from the rapid fire. He corrected his aim with his finger from each burst, and finished shooting a magazine in no time.

Among the bullets that have been shot, ten or more of them tore up the flesh of the griffon along with its rider, crushing his head, and bursting his internal organs, completely stopping their breaths.

Thanks to the experience of anti aircraft shooting on high-speed flight targets, (mainly attacking the enemy’s helicopter. Depending on the model, it can even be shot using a handgun) it resulted in the rider being careless, charging straight into them without being able to take any evasive movement, making the target bigger.

“Uo, how dangerous!” Karito breathed heavily.

Two seconds later, Karito released his shooting position and rolled to the side. The griffon and it’s rider’s body crashed into the place where Karito had been. *Gusha!* Karito grimaced as he heard the unpleasant gory sound of the impact from nearby.

“There are more reinforcements! Four riders will approach soon, and there is dragon mixed in this one too!”

“As expected of fantasy! Will the dragon breathe out fire as well?” Karito asked.

“Of course!” Reona nodded.

“How far can the dragon’s breath reach!?” Karito questioned.

“Erm, probably around 50 melts? That was what my father told me before, but I’ve never seen the breath on my own. Anyway, let’s escape. The opponent this time is too difficult to handle!” The beastwoman urged.

[TL: melts probably their own standard of measuring, I think it is meter.]

Karito operated his PDA while rushing the two of them, replacing his equipped weapon to another from the item box. His breath was heavy, and his heart was throbbing intensely too. However, what allowed him to pass a calm judgment was the <WBGO(Game)> which offered a sublime real battleground experience.

It was in an anti air battle such as this, that it was important to show large offensive power to his opponent to suppress them, Karito thought. Be it a bluff or anything else, it would work fine. If we show them excessive firepower, even they would not approach us recklessly.

The weapon Karito chose according to his plan was M46 light machine gun made by the Fabrique Nationale company. It was the improved type from the MINIMI sub machine gun that even the Japan Self-Defense Force adopted for their special force. It can use the M16/M4 assault rifle bullet on its belt link too.



If it uses the 5.56mm Nato bullet, its power might degrade, but its firepower far exceeded the M14.

It was said that it was lighter than the original model, but it is still 1 kg heavier than the M14BR. While being able to reload 200 bullets into the belt and feeling the profound weight of the light machine gun, Karito ran towards the centre of the forest. Just diagonally ahead was where the two parties had moved first, with Reona carrying Rina who didn't have the stamina and running power compared to the two.

The world recovered its light suddenly. When I took off my goggles and moved my neck to find the cause, a swirling, dazzling light sphere was floating in the night sky. It seemed to be a type of magic flare.

I heard a roar which sounded like a cow and a lion from the sky.

"The dragon breath is coming!" Reona warned.

At the same time as Reona's warning, Karito jumped to the side and turned over, pointing the muzzle of the light machine gun at the area where he heard the roar of the beast.

The marked dragon approached rapidly from the distance of 100m. Its height was about 20m, the size which probably about the same as a light airplane. The body that was illuminated by the flare light was gray, and it was covered with thick muscles that seemed to enable it to dance in the sky freely. Looking as if it was accumulating something, the dragon raised its neck, its face and throat bloated.

Anticipating the dragon's breath, the MK46 spouted out fire. The light machine gun discharged 5.56mm bullet flying from the muzzle at the initial speed of 940m/s and discharged 12 bullet/s. The tracer shell was loaded into the belt link at one shell for each 5 bullets, and it allows one to see the trajectory like a red laser clearly. He altered the trajectory of the tracer along with the barrage.

[TL: Tracer shell was just a bullet that was painted red on the tip.]

Thud thud! Karito could hear the sound of the rifle bullets sinking into the body of the dragon between the intervals of the gunshot. When Karito looked at it, the bullets hit between the area of its chest and its long neck.

Forgetting the existence of its rider, the dragon writhed in pain and agony as its balance broke.

Like the griffon from a while ago, the dragon fell and plunged at the direction of the three. This time, it went across the space between Karito and Reona, who was carrying Riina, breaking a few trees in the process before coming to a stop.

It was unfortunate for the three, but the rider was nearly unhurt. In addition to the fact that the 5.56mm shell couldn't pierce through the dragon's body, its body became a cushion for the fall.

"Die! You traitor of the human race-" The rider yelled.

"You stupid bastard!" Karito sighed.

He fired without question. Holes appeared in the rider's winter coat layered with thick skin armour as the man was forced to perform a dance of death.

The bullet shells lodged through the back of the body, and dug into the body of the dragon that laid on its side. The dragon leaked out a painful scream and raised its head; it wasn't dead yet. It seems like the 5.56mm bullet wasn't enough to kill the target this big, he analyzed calmly while shooting its head, this time stopping its breath completely.

"Amazing, to kill a dragon this easily..." Reona was in awe.

Disregarding Reona's admiration, Karito remained cautious. But, there was no sign of attack coming from the remaining Sky Cavalry. They were circling in the air. Things seemed to go according to Karito's plan. They became cautious of Karito's assault, and were keeping their distance.

The effect of flare disappeared, and darkness fell onto the forest once again. This was the most suitable timing.

"At any rate, let's run. We will have look for some place to hide." Karito instructed.

"I heard that there is a fort for travellers to take a rest in after we pass through this forest! If I am not mistaken, it is this way!" Reona replied.

As soon as Reona said that, she began to run. Karito ran after her as well. The pursuers shot up the flares again, but they continued to run without minding it. Within a forest with slippery grounds and trees roots sticking out of the earth, the two of them continued running with a speed like that of a sprinter on flat ground.

As soon as they went through the forest, they saw the shadow of a building. It was surrounded by high walls in the darkness; it was a stone fortress.

“It’s there!” Reona shouted.

They sprinted with all their strength. Because there wasn’t any place to hide, the two sprinted with a speed that could compete with a car, and they passed through the open gate and entered inside.

It seemed to be an unpopular place as it had that abandoned look where people haven’t been using it for some time. After all, at the point where the information about Aruwina Kingdom invading was heard, users of this place like travelling merchants and adventurers will naturally evade coming to the direction of Reona’s village.

He scanned the surroundings to make sure, but as expected, there was no other sign of life. The inside of the three storey building was pitch black as parts of the door and the windows were blocked, Karito took out a chemical light (when you bend it, the liquid inside will react and glitter) from his item box and lit up their surroundings. From the look of it, the first floor was a dining room.

They found a lamp in the cabinet enshrined in the corner of the room, and lit it up as lighting of the first floor.

He left Reona and Rina there and looked for a staircase to the upper floor. When he arrived on the roof, he looked for a place that was as inconspicuous as possible.

Soon, the pursuers were circling in the sky around the fort. They had obviously noticed that Karito had escaped to this fort. For certain, they would be watching the fortress where Karito has shut themselves in.

Surely they would be chased again if they attempt to escape from the fortress. Even if they had to remain confined in the fortress, there was a high probability that Karito would not be able to cope when they attack continuously

If they were to be caught by pursuers as it was, what kind of experience will Rina and Reona go through? That thought dominated Karito's mind rather than his own safety. It would truly be terrible.

"Rather than saying that we've succeed in running away from them, it's more accurate to say that we've been cornered by them, huh?" Karito sighed.

What should he do now? Karito wracked his brain.

CHAPTER 4

I AM A HERO

“They’re here, General!”

“Yes! The fugitives who killed Rezado-sama are taking refuge in that fort!”

Approximately 90 minutes after Karito had entered the fort, the Alwina Kingdom’s troops had received notifications from the Sky Cavalry, and arrived at the fort in front of the forest.

Numbering more than one battalion (approximately 600 people), around 750 soldiers from various branches of division alighted from horses, supply troops, and carriages. All of them were preparing for the battle.

“The targets are human man and a girl. In addition, there is also a beastwoman, totaling to 3 people. We tried to catch them, but we suffered a counter attack from the man and lost a griffon rider and dragon rider.”

“How could we have lost the dragon too!? Was that man also a magician?”

It’s very difficult to shoot down a sky cavalryman who’s flying in the sky with bows and arrows or throwing stones, unless a barrage of attacks was released.

Thus, the pursuing commander asked through the process of elimination, but his subordinate who reported the matter shook his head.

“It is unknown. We’ve never seen that kind of attack before. The man was pointing an iron stick-like thing that was either a cane or a magic item, and before we realised it, our subordinates who were trying to attack were killed after the sound of exploding gunpowder. I sent for my subordinates to collect the bodies of those who were killed after the fugitives escaped to the fort, and after an inspection, they have the same wound as Rezado-sama who was killed in the demi-human village.”

“...As expected, it seems like we have gotten the right guy who killed Rezado-sama.” The commander frowned.

“I also agree with that. Since those people have taken refuge within the fortress, our soldiers are now taking turns watching them from a high altitude as a precaution for a similar attack.” The commanding officer reported.

“Tell your units to not start attacking before I give my permission. If the fort collapses from the attack of the Sky Cavalry, we will need to dig out their corpses.”

The main attack of Sky Cavalry was a magic attack by the lead magician. In addition to the airstrike, bombs, molotov cocktails, as well as the dragon breath were commonly used.

All of them execute high destructive power to be proud of, but at times, it has to be taken into serious consideration as it also leads to bombing of the wrong targets and increasing their own damage, particularly in this case where they had to arrest the criminals and offer their bodies to the King to explain the state of affairs at the very least. Therefore, the order to attack from the sky isn't something that could be done easily.

Still, by watching from the sky so that they would not secretly escape while relying on their large war force to charge in... With this amount of people, they could crush and arrest them by sheer force like usual.

Using the Sky Cavalry to blast open the front gates and the walls surrounding the fort using magic, bombs, and dragon breath, thus opening a path inside as the ground soldiers arrive. This was the basic tactic to attack a fortress in this world.

“Each unit, form a formation and prepare to charge! Even though there are only a few enemies don't lower your guard!”

The red grid marks displayed on the screen... From the large numbers of them, Karito can't help but heave an amazed sigh while smiling in distress.

When a person faces extraordinary fear and despair, they become creatures that would laugh before showing their negative feelings.

“With this number, they're already on the level of completely crushing us...”

What the PDA screen projected was a real time picture of the forest and the wasteland

taken from the sky.

Karito had fired a shot to intimidate the Sky Cavalry circling around above the fort. He then sped away to distance himself from the enemies before sending out a reconnaissance plane.

It was a fine product called <SwitchBlade> that carried a cylindrical container similar to an anti-tank missile launcher. As it launches, the wings will extend out and ascend. After reaching a fixed altitude, the mechanism was made to move in circular motion automatically.



You can control it through the PDA, and the information it obtains will be displayed in the terminal. Because it was equipped with explosives, it is possible to do a kamikaze attack as well. Right now, Karito was flying the machine at a higher altitude than the Sky Cavalry to prevent them from detecting it.

Underneath the body of the aircraft was a camera that can capture any moving body above the ground and mark it with a red sign. From the direction of the forest that Karito had just gone through, it was already packed with deep red marks.

Are the pursuers of the Alwina Kingdom's forces all here? Do they really need to send all these men just to catch 3 people? He can't help but want to cry.

(...Is that white-robed magician a big shot in the army?)

Considering if that was the truth, I could understand why they had desperately mobilized a large army. In fact, it is happening now.

"What the hell should I do now...?" He sighed.

Karito, who had been controlling the reconnaissance plane from the staircase of the dance floor that connects to the rooftop, was already reeling in exhaustion from the difference in war power.

When he finally couldn't endure the loneliness anymore, Karito had ran away from the mountain hut, walking on and on, continuously without end. And when he thought he had at last arrived at a human settlement, it was a slaughter fest. Experiencing his first time killing, and when he finally had a warm time with the only surviving beastmen sisters, they were chased around and forced into this development now...

His shoulders drooped from the mental and physical exhaustion. It can't be helped when looking at this reality. It was necessary for him to work out a countermeasure immediately.

“.....”

Once his thoughts were refreshed, it became easy afterward on how he should act. Since he was given the experience to choose the right choice in a limited time in , he had already tempered his metal power so that he would not panic even under a disadvantageous condition. Or it might also be the influence of him experiencing becoming a killer for the first time.

Deciding the goal, choosing the way to do it... Karito made a decision.

“Alright.” He said to himself determinedly.

After finishing his meditation, Karito went back to the first floor. The figure of Reona hugging the frightened Rina was lit by the lamp light.

“Onee-chan, what will happen to us...?” The young girl asked nervously.

“It will be alright. Don't worry, because this time, I will protect Rina...” The beast-woman attempted to comfort her sister.

Reona looked up, and upon noticing Karito coming down, she had a relieved expression. She had remained calm in front of her little sister, but looking at the situation where the army of pursuers were waiting outside to kill them, she felt quite tired.

After patting her little sister's head, she plodded towards Karito to hear his story as her ears and tail swung about restlessly.

"How is the situation outside? Is the Sky Cavalry still hanging around?" She asked worriedly.

"It's becoming worse. The main force of the pursuers have already gathered inside the forest, and there are at least several hundreds of them." Karito stated bluntly.

"...It..... Isn't a joke right...?" Reona asked weakly.

Karito held out the PDA silently. Let alone knowing how to use the PDA, Reona who had never seen any electronic devices before was looking between Karito's face and the PDA in wonder.

Looking at the number of luminous dots shown in the sky and the symbol of the coat of arms displayed on the flags hoisted by the soldiers, she was roughly able to understand the function of this PDA in this situation. In other words, this thing that looked like a hand mirror was a magic item that allowed you to look at the situation outside with a bird's eye view, and the shining red marks represented for the enemy.

"Ha-Hahaha..." Dry laughter escaped her lips.

Just like Karito, she never expected for the Alwina Kingdom to mobilize such a large force to pursue them. She could only laugh in resignation.

After laughing for a while, her mouth was tugged wryly as she looked at Karito's face.

"From... From now on, what should we do!?" Reona despaired.

"The only way out of this fort is through the front gates. If we go out from there, the cavalry in the sky will surely notice, so no matter how fast our legs are, there will be no way for us to outrun the waves of horses and dragons..." Karito explained.

"If there were only horses, we could scatter them when we are inside of the forest, but there is no way we can shake off the griffons and dragons, even for me. They would definitely overtake us." She frowned.

"Then, instead of running away, it would be much better to hide somewhere. But, we would be found immediately if they decided to use the infiltration tactic to investigate,

even in the woods at night, and if we were to shut ourselves in here, the danger will be too big.” He sighed. “If the 3 of... No, if it was only me and Reona, no matter how advantageous the protection we have, there is no way we can win with this much difference in fighting power. If we were to be attacked from both the sky and the ground at the same time, we would be easily defeated. Even if we prepared a trap beforehand, they could simply blow up the fort with magic.”

Weapons with trap systems... They were mainly sentry guns or land mines, and the number of installations were restricted. However, it would be destroyed immediately if it receives a magic bombardment from the Sky Cavalry. Karito knew that because similar approaches have already been done in the game before.

... Actually, the opponent had already banned bombardments or bombings with magic, but, there was no way Karito could know that.

“Let’s say that even if we manage to repel the soldiers, there is a possibility that their reinforcements will rush out towards us again. Since the reinforcements wouldn’t have come to us, I think it is much better to arrange an escape plan rather than shut ourselves in here.” Karito suggested.

This isn’t a game. There is also no clear guideline to set a strategy.

Even if he knew that their deaths were the conditions for defeat, as long as the conditions for victory remain uncertain, the need to lock themselves in the fort and fight against Alwina’s army was also ambiguous.

...No, rather, he should be thinking about it this way. If it is to avoid the defeat conditions, there was no need for Reona and Rina to fight several hundreds of armed forces.

“Therefore I thought about something.” Karito stated.

“Do you have some plans!?” Reona asked agitatedly.

“...This plan isn’t on the level of a strategy.” He smiled with self-derision. “... I will become the decoy and charge straight towards those guys. In that time, Reona should take Rina and escape.”

“...Ha?” The beastwoman blanked out.

After freezing for a good 10 seconds, Reona's blank mind rebooted, and she grabbed Karito. With both hands, she grabbed and pulled on the collars of the young man with the black hair as she scowled at him while gnashing her teeth.

"What are you talking about?! Things like voluntarily running into your own death... I will never allow it!" She yelled.

"I can't help it. After all, there is no other plan that I can think of. If we left it as it is, the three of us will die. It would be much better for someone to attract the company outside while the others escaped from here." He reasoned calmly. "Also, I am suited to become a decoy."

"Even if you say so, there is no way for me to accept that plan so readily! 'I am suitable'? What do you mean by suitable! Why must it be you?!" She shouted, furious.

"...Because Reona and Rina are family." He stated.

"...!" Reona startled at that.

The two of them spontaneously looked towards Rina whose eyes wavered in anxiety, as she looked at her elder sister grab onto their savior and quarrel.

Karito turned his eyes toward Reona again, and he began to remove the hands that were clenched in his collar quietly. The hands that were holding onto Karito's collar hardened and trembled a little bit.

"I don't have any acquaintances, let alone family in this world. But, Reona still has your important younger sister. Isn't your father still alive? Do you still want to fight and die like this? What do you think this is for?" Karito asked.

"B-But." Her hands trembled harder.

"I don't have anyone. But, Reona still has your family..... That's why, it's okay..." He smiled at her.

"...You... Karito, why do you need to go to this extent?" She demanded.

"Why, huh?" He mumbled.

Reona lost all the strength in her arms. Feeling the warmth from both of the arms of Reona that seeped to his palms through his gloves, Karito felt his mouth loosen unconsciously.

It is this very warmth that he can call a reason.

“If this is in a movie, this will be a more embarrassing scene where I declare my decision, but...” He trailed off.

“What... What is it?” Reona asked softly.

“First of all, I don’t want Reona and Rina to die. With that reason alone, I think it is enough for me to fight.” Karito smiled once more.

After his parents died, he quit high school, shut himself from the world, and lived like a zombie. By the time he noticed it, he had already been sent to this world. Far from getting to know anyone, without knowing that no one would come, Karito had waited for the visitor that would never come and shut himself in his own small world, living in isolation. He was almost crushed by the loneliness.

To run away from the loneliness, he started to roam around to look for humans. Anyone would be fine as long as he could meet a person, and as a result, he experienced killing someone for the first time.

Then, he came across Rina and Reona.

The distance they had fled, tasting a slightly noisy meal around an open air fire, that little bit of contact with the sisters...

That alone was enough. The Karito now can risk his life for the trivial memories that Reona and Rina had given him.

...He never expected that he would someday do something like this, things that would only happen in movies and dramas where you risked your life fighting for someone that you’ve met for less than a day...

If such a heroic role is needed, then he would do it with all he could, he swore.

Since it was a role that any man would surely have dreamed about once in their life, it should be allowed for him to look good and show off at such a time.

“Anyway, I will attract their attention as much as possible. In that time, you need to escape towards the opposite side of the forest. I will scatter some smokescreen so it should be enough to deceive those monitoring from the sky too.” Karito elaborated more on his strategy before separating from Reona and passing by Rina to move towards the stairs.

At that moment, Rina’s small hands caught the hem of his clothes, and he stopped immediately.



“Ple-Please don’t go. I don’t want you to die...” She pleaded as her eyes blurred with tears of fear and panic.

Her innocence was clear to him. Being engulfed by a pleasant feeling, Karito stroked her head gently.

Rina’s golden hair was so smooth that it made him wonder what kind of shampoo she used. In the first place, he didn’t even know whether shampoo existed in this world.

Relaxing from the surprise of the feeling of a hand resting on top of her head, she tried to shake it off gently with her small hand.

I looked at the reconnaissance display from the <SwitchBlade> once again. I found out that the Alwina Kingdom’s troops had began to break into formations inside the forest. The other side seemed to be moving for an all out attack as well.

Operating the PDA, I changed my overall equipment from inside item box. The important points of this strategy were the smokescreens, bluffs, and something flashy.

“Let’s be as flashy as much as possible...!” He declared to himself.

First, he climbed up the stairs to the roof. Using the goggles, he switched it to night vision mode which amplifies the intensity of light that one can see in the dark, and peeked towards the sky from the shadows of the exit door. As expected there were dragons, griffons and other creatures that he couldn’t identify flying around the sky. With this, the strategy to snipe them from high grounds was made null.

He replaced his accessory equipment with a smoke screen grenade. It was a steel can the size of a 500 ml PET bottle, with its main body painted white. After removing the safety pin, he threw the grenade towards the roof and repeated this action a few more times. In no time, not only the roof, but the whole upper part of the fortress was covered by a large quantity of smoke coming out from the cans. As the upper part of the fortress was wrapped by smoke, from afar it must have looked like a giant torch or an active volcano.

Immediately, he ran down the stairs to the first floor, and threw smoke grenades outside through the doorway. Karito threw more smoke grenades into the back yard from the back door, and in less than a minute, the fort was immediately covered in white smoke.

According to the specifications of the game, the smoke emitted from the smoke screen grenade was harmless. Even if you breathed in some, it will only result in a light coughing fit, so it should be alright for Reona and Rina too. However, gases or black smoke from fire hand grenades or tear-gas bomb were toxic, so you will need to wear a gasmask.

“*Cough* W-What is this smoke?!” Reona coughed.

“With this, they wouldn’t be able to know our circumstances for the a while. Before the smoke disappears, I want the two of you to escape from this fort while I go rampant. If you move alongside the wall, you will be able to reach the back of the fort immediately.” Karito instructed.

“But, I can’t just leave Karito behind and escape!” The beastwoman protested.

Karito went out of the building where the thick smoke drifted, ignoring Reona’s pleas of bitterness and disagreement.

Of course, even Karito felt fear. Even if he wanted to pose as a hero and confront several thousands of soldiers to show off in front of a beautiful woman, scary things were still scary.

However, it was already too late because he already said and decided on it. He had to put it into action. Karito had chosen the road of death, a road of suffering. Since he had chosen the path of war, he will see to it until the end.

It was no longer possible to run away anymore, and he didn’t want to run because the girls who he decided to keep alive were staring at his back.

“You are really a fool, a big fool...” Reona stated softly.

“...Even I think so too.” Karito muttered as he advanced towards the front gate.

He changed his goggles to infrared night vision mode to see through the smokescreen. Due to its function of visualising the heat of objects, Karito was able to ignore the wall of smoke and grasp the movements in the surrounding area.

He removed the bolt and opened the gate. The white smoke screen that had

accumulated inside the courtyard started to flow outside towards the wasteland as soon as the gate was opened.

While being bathed by the stream of smoke, he replaced his weapon to a MGL140. It was a grenade launcher that can fire 6 times in rapid succession. It was loaded with smoking flares too. He fired in sequence, scattering them in all directions. The newly fired white smoke surrounded the wasteland too.



He confirmed the reconnaissance display of the enemy forces once again. Restless movements could be observed as a result of his doing. The distance from the fort to the forest where the troops took up position was around 500 meters, and the distance was gradually shrinking.

“First, I need to give them a greeting.” He mumbled.

He changed the from reconnaissance mode to attack mode. The image of the wasteland from the drone’s point of view was reflected on the PDA screen. He directly changed the system from automatic mode to manual mode from the PDA, and the image shown changed immediately. All the movement controls of the drone had been transferred into Karito’s hands which trembled from unease.

He slid his fingers onto the touch screen and swooped over from to the red marks that represented the locations of more than a few hundreds of enemy soldiers filling the wasteland, its size steadily increasing. He gave slight revisions to the flight course of the drone that was equipped with explosives in it, moving it slightly to the rear. His aim was their headquarters where a large number of commanding officers gathered.

After discovering his target, he made some final orbital adjustments and accelerated the speed of the , plunging it into the group in a single breath. The shape of the headquarters expanded on the center of the screen quickly.

The last thing he received from the PDA was an image of a soldier noticing the kamikaze attack, or rather, it was the frightened face of a man.

An explosion could be heard from a distance. The picture from the drone was cut off at the same time. It was the proof that the drone kamikaze has finished its last duty.

The screen immediately changed into the accessory and equipped armor selection. The new accessories and armors had already been selected. All he needed to do was to press the icon button.

There was no hesitation.

“Let the show of a lifetime begin!” He declared half-crazed as he pressed the icon button.



Armor: Juggernaut MK3

- Bulletproof performance class IV : Nullifies damage from handgun bullets and any other bullets smaller than a 7.62mm bullet. Furthermore, reduces shot damages, adjacent attack and shock damages from the bullet of any caliber up to 50%, excluding a headshot.
- The goggles and reinforced helmet : Infrared night vision feature, optical night vision feature, built-in stun grenade nullification feature. Nullifies any damage from a headshot with any handgun utilising a 7.62 mm bullet or lower.
- Anti-blast protection level III : Decreases 75% of explosion damage.
- Fireproof protection measures : Fire damage nullified.
- Internal ventilation : All damage from gases nullified.
- Physical strength support : Possible to move heavy loads (However it can't exceed the upper limits of the equipment.)
- Heavy armament: 50% decrease in speed.

Weapon : M134 Minigun

- Caliber: 7.62 mm x 51
- Number of bullet can be loaded: 4000 rounds
- Rate of fire: 4000 per minutes.
- Heavy Armament : Dash disabled.



[traitorAIZEN: Maybe something like this]





“Wha... What on earth happened there?!” One of the officers yelled.

There is no sign or omen at all.

The moment orders to attack were given to the 100 soldiers, it was withdrawn as white smoke immediately concealed the abandoned fort. Suddenly, an explosion struck the headquarters.

In spite of the injured personnel, what the Alwinan forces were more concerned about was the occurrence of an accident from the rear, causing the unrest of the soldiers in the frontlines. Because of the damage to the headquarters which commanded all the military units, the order to halt the soldiers wasn't given, and the Alwinan forces gathered in the wasteland were overrun by confusion now.

“Some... Someone, hurry up and bring the healers!” Someone shouted urgently.

“I..... I can't hear anything...” A soldier muttered blankly.

“My... My leg... Ahhhh!” Another cried out in despair.

The headquarters which was the explosion point devolved into pandemonium.

All that remained were those with slight injuries, screaming as they scattered, those who bled from both ears, aimlessly loitering, and those near the explosion point who lost their four limbs. Amongst them were several people lying silently on the ground. Even with just a glance, you could see that they suffered fatal injuries.

As for the highest ranked officer in this pursuit unit, or in this case, the commander-in-chief was fortunately able to escape from this trouble unhurt. The moment the explosion happened, his aides and the bodyguards surrounded him like a wall so the damage didn't extend to him.

“What... What on earth happened?! Someone give me a report!” He demanded loudly.

“We don't know anything either! No magic attack was launched from the fort at all!” One of the soldiers reported.

The total length of the Switchblade was around 60cm. It was a size that even the Sky Cavalry, in caution, would easily miss in this dark sky. The main cause was also due to its flying sound hidden by the noise of the mass of soldiers moving to attack, and they had only realized it when the bomb impacted.

“Tch! Such an impudent...!” The commander snarled, gnashing his teeth.

The commander judged that the attack came from the guy they were chasing. There was no other reason.

Their headquarters had been attacked directly, and the fort they should be invading was wrapped in a mysterious white smoke. All other details remained unclear. It would be foolish to order the soldiers to charge in when their chain of command was in chaos, and their vision robbed.

Perhaps that smoke was created by the opponent’s magician(?). It could be some sort of poison gas barrier or something like that. How should they fight against an opponent that used methods they have never seen before? The commander hesitated in his decision-making.

Several seconds later, he made his decision. He decided to send for the magic corps since he can’t afford to bombard the fort at this time.

“Send my order! Magic corps move forward! Blow off the smoke by bombarding it with fire balls!” He shouted.

Upon the his order, a heavily armed knight wrapped in thick armor and large shields stepped forward to protect the magic corps.

All the members wore a robe with the Alwina Kingdom’s crest sewn onto their backs like the typical magician in fantasy tales. They grasped wooden canes with precious stones embedded in them. The canes in this world mainly acted as a booster to amplify the spirit magic of the magicians.

“Prepare! Start the chanting!”

As they were ordered, dozens of magicians started to prepare their chants at once

It was at that time that a shadow began to sway within the white smoke. While all the

soldiers' attention were focused onto the figure, their movements came to a stop, and little by little, the shadow inside the smoke started to become clearer. The silhouette inside the white smoke was the figure of person, but it was short and stout. It looked like a knight who was wearing a full plate armor, but something seemed different.

Footsteps were approaching them.

Gacha, gacha.

The sound was like the metal clashing against each other. It swaggered around like a man-eating bear's heavy footsteps.

The real nature of the mysterious shadow was revealed in front of several hundred soldiers.

As most of them has expected, the shadow was short and stout, which was because it was wrapped in a protective full body armor. But, the design of the was one unrecognizable by all the Alwinan forces.

The black suit was equipped with shellproof plates and a tactical vest. A protector was added on the shoulders, forearms and knees, but the defence was raised to the level where it would not harm minimum mobility. The tactical vest was loaded with quantities of ammunition and hand grenades.

The next thing that caught their attention was the presence of the items carried by the armoured figure. The ammunition belt was extended from the large bag to the electric gatling gun with 6 gun barrels.

Of course, for the Alwinan soldiers, they couldn't have known the dangers of the person they were facing now.

While coiled by wisps of white smoke, deep crimson eyes sparkled from within.

CHAPTER 5

JUGGERNAUT

“Killing one person makes one a criminal. Killing one hundred makes one a hero.”

It was a saying by someone.

“No, was it ten thousand people, or was it one million people?”

[TL: it was one murdered a criminal, millions a hero. By Beilby Porteus]

No matter what, what Karito had planned to do will not change by any means. From now on, Karito would be killing dozens, even hundreds of people.

From having to perform such actions, there would be no meaning to be nervous about it anymore.

The fact that Karito had killed people would not change no matter how much he tried to fix it, not to mention there's no longer enough time to worry about such a thing either. He can't delay anymore, because he needed to concentrate on the enemy in front of him.

He could feel the gazes of several hundreds of soldiers, illuminated by the faint moonlight and torches, boring into him. Karito's waist almost gave out a little from the sheer pressure.

The amount of attention that Karito, the former shut-in, had faced most was at best, during the graduation ceremonies at his primary and middle school. Standing there right in front of so many intense stares had put him under extraordinary pressure, but he had to endure it. There was no way he could back down now. If he escaped, the two girls would definitely die.

The lives of the sisters that he had sacrificed himself for had a much heavier weight than the life of Watari Karito himself.

Right in front of Karito were the figures of a group of magicians surrounded by knights

equipped with heavy shields. Would they be firing magic spells simultaneously now, he wondered.

First of all, let's clean up these guys. Thinking that, he slowly pointed the muzzle of the Minigun in their direction. His right hand gripped tightly onto the joystick that fiercely resembled the airplane's control stick, and then he pulled the trigger. The battery powered six-barrelled gun started to rotate slowly in response.

When the Alwina forces started to take measures to counter, it was already too late.

Rather than the sound of gunshots rattling one's eardrums, the gun made sounds similar to those of huge machines instead.

The shooting rate of the M134 minigun's rapid fire was 4000 bullet per minute. In other words, it spits out more than 80, 7.62mm rifle bullets in one second. The gunshot sounds and firing flame was especially intense.

Within the belt link, a tracer shell was mixed into the bullets with the ratio of 1:5. Since there were nearly 20 shots of tracer shells made within a second, the shots' trajectories were akin to that of a laser beam

The moment the laser bullets touched the shields of the knights at the front row, a dreadful screeching sound echoed throughout the wasteland in the dark of the night.

The iron plates fixed onto the surfaces of the shields shattered immediately. The shields were produced by reinforcing thick wooden shields with a thin iron plate on the surface only served to protect the mage corps from hails of arrows and stones. It was impossible for the shields to stop a rain of military-grade rifle bullets.

Under the rain of bullets, the shields were smashed into two simultaneously. But, it didn't just end there. The bullets also pierced through the armours of the soldiers easily, splitting them cleanly into chunks of flesh as their armours splintered like they were made of mere wood. The crushed shields, armour fragments, and human body parts scattered around as if they had been in an explosion, polluting the plains in the darkness of the night.

There was even a person who was instantly annihilated when the bullet hit his head, going through the steel helmet protecting it as if the helmet was mere paper. There were some lucky enough to be hit by the round parts of the bullets that repelled the

bullets from each other, however they only managed to survive for a moment. Dozens of bullets followed shortly after, concentrated to kill their fellow companions. This was the power of the Minigun that shoots 4000 bullets per minute.

This weapon's purpose was to annihilate the enemy while equipped on vehicles such as airplanes, but it was instead, being exploited in this way in this different world.

For the first time, the enemy army started to become disordered, but before it could happen, someone prevented it.

"Don't falter! There is only 1 enemy! Mage corps are retreat to the back and reorganize! Archers, fire the arrows! Cavalry and Infantrymen surround and crush him!" The instructions from the general who survived the kamikaze attack reached the ears of the soldiers; the volume of his orders surprisingly not losing to the loudness of the minigun.

The soldiers then recovered quickly and obeyed his orders.

Watching it from the top, the formation that enemy took was the shape of an arrow. The archers were located at the left and right flanks, equipped with strong bows with the length of no less than 1.2 m, not to mention they also used crossbows. The sound of 100 arrows being fired cut through the night sky sharply.

For an ordinary soldier, the bow and arrow would be enough. But, the one they were dealing now was the powerful modern arms 'Juggernaut' which had the best defensive power in WBGO.

The Juggernaut is a battle oriented, anti-explosion enhanced suit that boasted of its immense defence - it can't be pierced by rifle shells even when they're shot at point blank in the frontlines. Due to the layers and folds of thick Kevlar fibres with metal seams, it was also fireproof and stab proof (setup). Moreover, the anti-bullet plates were sectioned into panels so that they would not hinder movement when placed on the legs, body and shoulders. Rather than a heavy infantry armour from modern warfare, it looked more like the armour of samurai during the Warring Periods.

The rough, full-face helmet that covered the entire head also boasted of the same defence. The helmet was cylindrical and air tight, just like the ones from bomb suits. Furthermore, the muffler outside was surrounded by anti-bullet plates, so the defence around the lip and neck was perfect too.

In addition, like when it was an equipment inside the game, artificial muscles were also built into the suit. In the demonstration, it can even flip an armoured vehicle over, but in exchange for this outrageous defence, the movement speed was greatly decreased. This, too, was the typical; characteristic of a high defence armour.

However, even though the wearer's whole body was being protected by this ridiculous armour, it does not mean that his body would also be as tough as steel.

So,

(Is... Is this really alright?! I've heard that if the opponent uses bows, the Kevlar could still be pierced!)

Even if he tried to avoid the arrows now, he would not be able to escape the effective range of arrows raining down on him.

From the rain of arrows, several dozens fell straight to Karito. Far from piercing the armour, all of them bounced off harmlessly without piercing it.

But, that's natural. Because Karito had dropped out when he was at high school, he only possessed miscellaneous knowledge, and other knowledge that he could gather from the net, not to mention, it was difficult to grasp the level of technology of this world. Perhaps it was around the late medieval age to the early modern age. First of all, it was impossible to pierce armour that was able to withstand explosions, and rifle bullets with just arrows. At most, the pain would only be around the feeling of being constantly hit by pebbles.

But the experience of receiving a rain of arrows was bad for the heart. The moment the sharp arrowhead was about to hit the area around the forehead, he unconsciously closed his eyes, and stayed frozen in that place from fear reflexively.

If both of his hands weren't occupied by the minigun, he would already be searching his body for injuries. It was a miracle that neither his front nor the back didn't leak from fear. It was honestly much scarier than being attacked by snipers.

His first kill at the village where the massacre had taken place was more of a surprise attack, so it couldn't even be called a fight.

When they were being assaulted in the dark forest from the sky, his head was so full of plans for counterattacks and escapes that he didn't even have the time to feel fear. That was why it could be said that this was the first time he sensed their killing intent while having counterattack plans with a clear mind.

Because he came here to kill, he could understand that it was natural for the opponent to want to kill him too, but it was just that this time, he had instinctively realized it.

Karito didn't know where he was standing now. He didn't even know the name of this continent, or the name of this world either, but, he understood one thing.

This wasn't WBGO or Earth, this was the real world. This was a battlefield, the opponent was trying to kill him, and he, too, was trying to kill them. In other words, they were trying to kill each other.

Fear swiftly turned into anger upon realising that.

It was like the feeling when a bullied child (himself) who had been kicked to grovel stood up to resist, and actually crushed the faces of the delinquents.

What the hell are you shitty bastards doing?! Trying to kill children who didn't have weapons while laughing... No, all these scumbags who have gathered here... I will kill them. Everyone here, all of them, all of them, all of them should just drop dead and die!!!

He roared in anger and resentment, and squeezed again the trigger of the minigun once more.

Once again, the muzzle of minigun started to spit out bullets. The bullets pierced into the cavalry whom had begun to charge upon receiving reinforcements. In an instant, dozens of cavalymen became mere lumps of meat, along with the war horses they rode on. Having lost their original shape, it became difficult to differentiate which lump of flesh belonged to a human or a horse. The wasteland was instantly dyed red with blood.

While pulling on the trigger, he twisted his body in order to swing the muzzle sideways. With that, the tracer bullets perceived the approaching soldiers, starting

from the vanguard troops. One by one, the soldiers lost their flesh, armour, shapes, and lives altogether. In no time, they became a mix of minced flesh and fragmented metal.

A peculiar cry rung from the air faintly. At the same time, the soldiers who kept charging over their comrade's corpses were being mowed down by Karito in one go from a distance.

Because of bulletproof armour's collar, his field of vision was extremely limited. When Karito turned his whole body around to investigate the source of the strange cry, the figure of a dragon nosediving towards him entered his line of sight.

Even if he lifted the muzzle to intercept it, the length and weight of the minigun would have backfired in this situation, and Karito wouldn't be able to intercept the beast in time. The dragon hovered in the air for a moment before opening its large mouth, and shot out a deep blue flame with a force akin to that of a flamethrower.

“UOOOOOOOOO!!!?”

Karito's figure disappeared within the flame. The scale of the breath's power rivalled the napalm bomb, unexpectedly producing a huge bon-fire that lit up the wasteland.

From a distance away from the area of impact, the Alwinan army cheered despite choking from the impact of the heat wave generated. This is because the dragon, a red skinned fire dragon, was considered to have the strongest dragon breath amongst all other dragons. The coverage of its firepower was 3 melt (1 melt is about the same length as 1 meter,) and it can even completely vaporise an Orc Demon.

The army was convinced that no one would be able to be live after receiving such a hit directly. From afar, the fire dragons and their riders, as well as other sky cavalrymen, gathered slowly towards the point of explosion (ground zero), carelessly descending below their usual altitude, thinking that it was the end of the battle.

If you think with the common sense of this world, their actions and awareness were beyond rash. But, this reaction was something expected if their enemy was an ordinary opponent. It was normal for the soldiers to relax their guards after such a move.

Even though the casualties incurred numbered over a hundred, they still haven't understood it yet, that the common sense of this world couldn't be applied to this

enemy. In the first place, he wasn't an ordinary soldier at all.

A shadow flickered from within the flames.

"O-Oi!" One of the soldiers shouted.

"What is it? Is there something wrong?" His comrades asked.

"That! Look over there!" The same soldier who raised the alarm pointed.

*Gasha, gasha, gasha... *

A body wrapped in an unknown armour, armed with a magic item-like weapon which they never seen before... His footsteps reverberated like those of an Oni or a Devil from within the blazing flames.

At that moment, as the Alwinan infantrymen stood rooted to the spot in shock, the unforgettable laser-like bullets sped out from inside the blaze and pierced into the fire dragons that were circling in the air at low altitudes in declaration of their easy victory. Blood sprayed out under the reflection of the light from the blaze below. The cries of the fire dragons in their death throes echoed startlingly in the soundless night. Similarly, their rider's who have also been pierced by the bullets, were already breathing their last as they fell head first towards the ground.

One after another, the anti-aircraft bullets consecutively catch the sky cavalrymen who had carelessly lowered their altitudes. The soldiers were decimated in an instant.

The flames that had lost their fuel gradually lost its power, and terrible, heavy footsteps could be heard from inside it again. A chill assaulted the soldiers, despite them already bathing in sweat from the heat wave through their armours. An enormous amount of sweat drenched their bodies, but it was not from the heat wave, or excitement of the battlefield.

The strange soldier appeared once again.

Surrounded by sputtering flames, the figure stood tall with his whole body stained black. Smoke was slightly rising off his armour, but he stood before the army looking fine, as though he was completely undamaged from the dragon breath.

The soldier, slowly and steadily, restarted the assault on Alwinans with his minigun once more.

In contrast to his intimidating air as he trudged towards the opposing army one step at a time, Karito was actually drenched in a large amount of cold sweat, rivalling those of the enemy soldiers.

(That was pretty scary! I thought I would be burned to death for sure!)

To tell the truth, just moments before he received the air raid from the fire dragons, Karito had completely forgotten about the existence of the Sky Cavalry above his head. If it was not for the Juggernaut's fire protection measures (nullifies fire damage), he would have turned into charcoal for sure.

In the first place, the reason he ended up in this predicament of plunging into battle with the Alwinan army alone, was to call the Sky Cavalry's attention to himself so that Reona and Rina could escape. It was like putting a cart before a horse. Karito was reflecting on it deeply.

But with this, the probability of those sisters successfully escaping rose considerably. He was able to reduce the number of eyes from the sky somehow, and the survivors of the Sky Cavalry were keeping their distance from Karito too. There was no sign of them flying to the part of forest where Reona and Rina had escaped into.

But, he mustn't relax his guard yet. At any rate, Karito needed to thrash around more violently to attract the attention of the pursuers (Alwinan Army) to himself.

He didn't think much about retreating. He was aware from the beginning that this was a one way ticket. By sacrificing himself alone, he could save two people. It was a simple math problem.

(I was saved thanks to the fireproof armour, and luckily, the ammunition of the minigun didn't go off by accident too.)

When firearms break, an "unusable" icon will be displayed, but since there was no such indication even after the main body of the minigun has been scorched by a high temperature flame, it should be still alright to fire it, or so he judged. Thus, he fired it repeatedly again.

Whenever he saw the massive mountain of minced meat produced, he felt something gradually rising from the back of his throat. He had almost vomited all of his dinner, and possibly, some blood. However, Karito suppressed it and continued to shoot.

“This... Is this guy a monster?!” One of the soldiers shouted in despair.

Indeed... To the humans of this world, the present him must have looked like a monster. It couldn't be helped. Karito somehow calmly agreed with that soldier as he listened to the screams of the soldiers between each gunshot.

If such an atrocious person like that existed, I would like to meet him... No, I would like to stop him, because the ending definitely wouldn't be pretty. Even he, himself, wouldn't think of wanting to approach such a guy, especially in this fantasy parallel world. Who knows what kind of races and monsters exist here.

He glanced at the corner of his field of vision. The number of remaining bullets on the weapon that was equipped was displayed by the goggles. The remaining bullets loaded inside the mini gun belt link was under 1000. As for the indication of damage on all parts of armour, it was all green.

He wonder if the remaining soldiers still number around the hundreds? he had easily killed around 100 or 200 people. How much more should he kill? How much more do he need to kill until the other side would retreat?

Fatigue attacked Karito's whole body. After witnessing the slaughter of the whole village and annihilating the soldiers who did it, experiencing his first kill, trying to escape inside the forest in the dark night, and now, he had started a war with several hundreds of soldiers alone... It was too much for one day. The burden on his mind and nerves have started to affect his body.

That was why he was late to notice it. He became short-sighted under the protective mask. On top of that was the heavy machine gun, as well as the armour that was heavier than the bomb suit, and that the existence that approached him was faster than a man running on two legs. So, he was late to notice it.

While the soldiers charging from the front was annihilated in an instant, 3 heavy cavalry units deviated from the main army, and assaulted Karito from his flank with steel spears from atop their horses.

“Ya?!”

When Karito had finally sensed them and turned around, there was no longer any time to intercept it.

Luckily, he is able to twist his body in order to avoid the first soldier lance thrust, so the tip of the lance deviated from his body and hit his shoulder armour instead. Nevertheless, the shock was tremendous. It gave him the illusion of taking a direct hit from a rifle. Karito didn't understand why he didn't fall down just yet either.

The second soldier struck. At that time, Karito was in the middle of twisting his body to dodge the first strike.

(This aim... There is no time!)

There was not enough time to intercept or dodge it. The only thing Karito could do was to stretch his legs, lower his waist, and be prepared for a direct hit from the enemy.

The second soldier easily aimed at his torso, and commenced the attack. This time, the impact felt like he had been run over by a Humvee (High Mobility Multipurpose Wheeled Vehicle).

But, the heavy cavalrymen wouldn't expect that with the defence of Juggernaut with added armour plates, even a 7.62 mm rifle bullet would not be able to pierce it. In addition, there was also the physical strength generated by artificial muscles hidden beneath the suit.

The moment the heavy cavalry's cone shaped tipped lance came into contact with the armour, instead feeling the sensation of piercing flesh, the impact felt more like that of crashing into a huge lump of iron ore. The eyes of soldier widened in surprise at that.

Immediately, the body of the soldier who tried to pierce Karito's body floated up from his horse. In short, it was the effect of the law of reaction. With the acceleration of the sprinting horse added to the piercing power of the lance being stopped, the person that was holding onto the lance would be ejected backward.

The body of the second soldier rolled down on the ground. For that soldier, it was unlucky that the third cavalry soldier was following right after him.

“Hya?!” His cramped scream was lost in the thundering steps of the rampaging, riderless horse.

As for the second soldier, his whole body, along with his armour, had been trampled by his comrade’s horse, and became a corpse. The third soldier mounted on the horse fell off, and his own horse delivered the final blow by breaking his neck, resulting in instant death.

“Gaaah...!”

After hearing the footsteps of the first cavalry soldier fading away in the back, Karito couldn’t help but to fall down onto his knees.

Karito’s internal organs felt like they had been turned upside down from the shock of the impact. It’s stifling, it’s painful... It felt like the contents of his stomach would exit from his mouth any moment. It was a mystery why he didn’t roll over from this intense of pain.

It was too fatal a weakness to show on a battlefield.

Light spheres came flying from behind the line of infantrymen, landing perfectly in Karito’s surroundings, and exploded. The dragon riders that attacked him in the forest simultaneously bombarded him with magic cannons as well.

Looking at the impact when the spheres touched the ground, he estimated the explosive power to be roughly at the same level as an RPG (Anti-Tank Rocket) class. A large hole appeared on the ground, and the shockwave hit Karito. Before he could notice it, his body which was bulked up by reinforced armours had been intensely blown away by invisible hands.

“Gofu?!”

He was attacked by a nauseating sensation. Even though his whole body was in pain, it was thanks to the stun nullification of the Juggernaut that his senses of sight and hearing were still working properly. His consciousness seemed to fade away because of the damage. It took Karito several seconds to realise that he had fallen down while facing the sky, the night sky filling his entire field of vision.

Although the surface of the armour was slightly damaged, the armour itself didn’t have

any problems. The problem was that the person wearing the equipment was about to reach his limit, but thanks to the bomb suit's ability most of the explosive power was reduced such that he got off to a degree that didn't rob him of his consciousness somehow.

It was the result of a close hit. He didn't want to think about what could happen to the armour if it was hit directly.

On the lower right of his view, the area that shows the current equipped weapon and remaining bullets icon flashed on and off, along with an indication of 'weapon damaged, impossible to use'. He struggled to look up while lying down on the ground, and saw that the electrical parts of the minigun was giving off sparks, and one portion of the gun barrel was also deformed.

In between Karito and the army was a cloud of dust that resulted from magic fired in succession. The battlefield was suddenly enveloped in silence, and then, he could hear the soldiers buzzing.

"Did we do it!?" One soldier asked agitatedly.

(Too bad, but you just raised a flag.)

I would love to answer with that, but my voice wouldn't come out. The only sound that Karito, who was on the verge of dehydration, could make was a quick and intense raspy breathing like a panting dog.

While being tormented with the extra clothes that he equipped, he was able to stand up somehow. Even though Karito's movements was hidden by the dark night and the rising dust cloud, it was only a matter of time for him to become visible to the other party.

He unequipped his destroyed minigun, and equipped a new HK416. This rifle was adopted from the M4 carbine that was issued to US military, and improved by the H&K Company. The original was highly famed for its reliability. This rifle had dot sights with a 100 bullet drum magazine capacity. It was also equipped with a M320 Grenade Launcher that improved its firepower drastically.



The ammunition he chose to use against enemies equipped with protective gear was the armour piercing bullets. It wasn't as powerful as the 7.62MM bullets, but the power was sufficient.

Furthermore, he added one more thing to increase his firepower. He materialized the gun from his equipment list. It was the improved light machine gun that was adopted in many countries, F (Fabrique) N (Nationale) MK46. He equipped it with a box magazine that could fire 200 5.56mm Nato bullets consecutively, the same bullets used by the HK416.



Switching to infrared night mode, Karito proceeded to look at the present state of the Alwinan forces through the dust cloud. As soon as he did that, the silhouettes of countless people indicated with red and a tinge of orange were projected in his sight.

Most of the silhouettes had parts of their body looking darker than the others. The infrared night vision mode visualized the temperature of the objects it displayed. As it displays the difference in the temperature of the human body, the parts covered by metallic equipment looked oddly out of place.

The infantry lining in the front row were those equipped with protective gear covering their body and heads, with the exception of their face, and carried long spears and long swords. Right behind them was the heavy infantry equipped with strengthened

armour covering most parts of their body, creating a blueish silhouette. He also discovered several knights sitting astride on their horses. Thinking back to how their formation was at beginning, an archer unit should be arranged right behind the shield bearing soldiers. He could see the silhouette of those holding canes in one hand emitting a reddish heat source, in other words, soldiers without any kind of armour on their body, the survivors of the mage corps that leashed concentrated fires at Karito some time ago at the furthest end.

If only the was still functioning, he would probably be able to faintly see the presence of a group of white robed people. Their appearance would surely stand out, even at night.

“All units, charge!” With the order of the commander as the signal, a large number of soldiers who still maintained their fighting spirit started an all-out charge with a loud battle cry.

The survivors of light infantry alone reached 3 digits. Roused by their survival instincts, their intimidating footsteps carried a destructive force resembling that of a tsunami or a landslide.

The charging steps and roars of robust soldiers shook the night air. Even Karito could sense the air tremble with fear through his heavy armour.

(From now on, it's the crucial point.)

He lowered his centre of gravity, and prepared himself.

8 out of 10 chances, he would probably die here. He had already prepared himself when he decided to part from the sisters.

The smoke cleared up. Aiming towards Karito, the horde rushed forward at full speed, the speed clearly visible to the naked eyes. Every single one of them brandished their swords, glaring at Karito with bloodshot eyes.

Faced with such a scene, not even fear surfaced any longer.

In his right hand was the drum magazine attached HK416, and in his left hand was the MK46. With both weapons loaded with a myriad of bullets, they dangled against his hips, and Karito's fore-finger squeezed both triggers simultaneously.

Its barrage was several levels inferior compared to the mini gun. Nevertheless, it still held enough power to instantly make a beehive out of one or two vehicles, and those bullets were aimed towards the Alwinan infantry that was charging forward in front of him.

His first target was the survivors of the cavalry which was much quicker than the infantry units. The recoil from the large assault rifle and light machine gun made it impossible to make an accurate aim, but, he had memorized the bullet paths since the tracer bullets loaded into the MK46 ammunition belt at the ratio of 5:1 made it easy to correct the line of fire.

As soon as they were caught by the barrage of bullets, the cavalymen fell from their horses as if pushed by an invisible rod. Among the bullets fired, some penetrated their horses. Surprised by the pain, the horses shook the soldiers off. Many ended up trampled even with their armours by hooves and bodies weighing several hundreds of kilos.

After the cavalry unit was decimated, next were the infantry units. By the time he had switched his targets, the distance between him and the mass of soldiers had diminished to less than 100 m.

In any case, he shot at them randomly. With the 5.56 mm rifle bullet, an armour piercing bullet, the thin iron plate which the infantrymen equipped was incomparably powerless. Along with a satisfying sound, the bullets pierced through the armours of the Alwina troops as they fell one after another. The fallen infantrymen would not wake up for a second time.

Without stopping, the foot soldiers stepped over the bodies of their friends and marched onwards, because it was an everyday occurrence for the soldiers next to them to die instantly in a battlefield.

Although the barrage from modern firearms showed an overwhelming result over the infantry units, there were still only two guns.

Just like the cavalymen who landed a successful hit with their spear charge moments ago, with sacrifice of their comrades, ten infantry individuals had successfully approached Karito from the rear, and drew their swords to stab Karito.

They used all the power they had, and swung their blade towards his shoulders.

*Ding! *Ding!*

Dull sounds echoed as their swords were repelled. Looking at how it was able to endure even the cavalry's charge, he could see how high the defence was. The unfaltering Alwinan soldiers lunged with their swords, spears and axes again. If he kept getting ganged up by them like this, his scheme would be exposed.

"As if I'll let you do it!" Karito roared.

Realizing how dangerous it could be, Karito took action. Having lost the minigun, he was freed from the dash penalty. Juggernaut itself has a powerful defence despite the compensation of debuffed speed, and even though it didn't allow a powerful dash that could transcend a sprint athlete easily, he was still able to run.

Karito charged towards the infantrymen who tried to surround him. As Karito had his whole body hardened and reinforced by the armour plates, one unlucky soldier smashed his face on it as he rammed into Karito's shoulder. Karito could feel the sheer force of the soldier smashing into his shoulder as the sensation transmitted over his armour.

On his back was the knocking impact of several attacks from dangerous weapons. He turned vigorously and landed a hit with the MK46 on his left hand. Even without bullets loaded, the lump of iron weighing more than 5 kg could be used as a club to the heads of unlucky enemies. A strange crashing sound echoed from the impact. The infantryman who had his head twisted to an unnatural angle collapsed on the spot. Without a pause, Karito swung the light machine gun around while discharging ammunition.

Another infantryman who held a shield in his left hand and a glaive (naginata) on his right pounced to reap Karito's neck. The bomb suit was designed to protect the head and chest, as well as the vital points, and the back of his head was entirely covered by the armour plate, so the collar easily stopped the blow of the glaive.

However, the shock of the attack near his head shook his field of vision and brain. A large part of the damage was reduced by Juggernaut, but, in the end it was only a reduction, and not nullification.

In reality, the attacks of the soldiers who flung themselves to Karito had been slowly eating away at the HP gauge that only Karito could see. It was unthinkable that the Alwinan forces would allow Karito any time to use a recovery potion.

Would Karito reach his limit first, or would the Alwinan forces?

“You bastard!!” Karito gave a kick to the infantryman who swung a glaive at him while roaring angrily.

The soldier raised his shield to stop the blow immediately, but it was useless. The kick that was combined with a heavy mass of armour and strengthened man-made muscle his body, blowing the soldier off parallel to the ground, and hitting several of his comrades along with their shields, just like in kung fu movies. Using the HK416 in his right hand, he shot at them rapidly, finishing them off.

The situation would only gradually worsen, or so he judged. As the result of him having kicked the enemies away, he was able to escape and create some distance through the small gap he earned. While escaping outside the range of the enemies’ suicidal charges, he fired the two guns blindly once again.

Karito fired the MK46 for a long time until the bullets loaded on the ammunition belt were exhausted, so he chose to abandon the light machine gun. It was because reloading bullets would take time that he did not have.

Karito’s left hand picked up a flashbang (stun grenade) precisely from the various grenades which hung at his waist. He then threw it to a group of infantrymen, and a dazzling flash of light was born in the centre of the plains that was stained with rivers of blood.

Instead of injuring the enemy with blasts and fragments, stun grenades aimed to snatch away the sight and hearing of the enemies within the area temporarily with a thunderous roar and flash.

It wasn’t as effective when used in an open space, but it brought immediate results as the Alwinan army had gotten used with the darkness of the night. The majority of the infantrymen approaching Karito had their sight blinded, and instinctively held their faces as they writhed in agony.

One part of Karito’s Juggernaut was an integrated-type reinforced helmet with goggles

which covered his whole head, invalidating the effects of the stun grenades, leaving him safe.

While the infantry was overwhelmed, he immediately threw the second batch of grenades. This time, they were regular grenades. Small scraps of iron scattered across the whole area, shredding the bodies of the soldiers to pieces as the shock wave produced destroyed their internal organs. The remnants who escaped the grenades were met by the gunfire of the HK416.

Then, he could see a wave of attacks emitting light come flying down. It wasn't only light spheres this time, there were fireballs as well.

“Uoottooo!!”

Fireballs the size of a hand-ball slanted behind Karito, missing him. When the fireball hit the ground, the flame roused up to a diameter of several meters before engulfing the area in flames. Its destructive power wasn't as potent as the fire dragon's breath a while ago, but what surprised Karito was the fact that they had attacked their allies who were still in the midst of the melee battle. The infantry troops who were already half dead from the grenades were burned to death by the magic of their magician allies.

From the bottom of his heart, Karito was glad that the mask blocked the smell of burning flesh completely.

There was an interval until next magic could be fired. This time, a barrage of arrows came raining down. Knowing that the arrows would not be able to pierce him, Karito calmly loaded a new magazine into his HK416 while being showered by the rain of arrows. However he didn't fire it immediately. Instead, he loaded a magazine into the M320 Grenade Launcher in his right hand.

“Is the angle like this?” He mumbled.

The grenade launcher attached at the bottom of the rifle barrel was slanted upwards, and the ammunition inside was launched. A 40 mm grenade flew through the smoke.

After a short pause, a new explosion resounded. Screams began to overlap with each other. He understood that it had exploded in the centre of the mage corps through the image reflected. The force of the blast and the splinters were taking their lives.

The next grenade was then loaded. Usually, grenade launchers compatible with assault rifles had a slide type gun barrel, but, the M320 was a horizontal swing type.

The smoke had almost disappeared after the second bombardment. At this moment, few surviving magicians were in good condition, and the soldiers guarding them were nearly annihilated when they took damage from the blast thrown into the centre of their small group. Even though they weren't equipped with modern weaponry, the magicians with the power unleashed from their infamous canes truly deserved to be called a human fort.

It really is a fantasy world, Karito thought idly as he ignored the smell of gun powder all over his body, and fired another grenade shell, completely annihilating the magician unit this time. He then fired the HK416 for good measure.

Despite of the enormous casualties from the infantry troops, the enemy general ordered the archers to fire another volley in vain, not knowing when to give up.

Karito anticipated the order and turned to fire the M320 at the archer units first before they were able to execute the command. Following after the magicians, the archer units were engulfed in the explosion, sending them into disarray, rendering them unable to shoot.

Ignoring the light machine gun that he had thrown away, he reloaded the HK416 with 5.56 mm bullets and continued his pursuit.

Long periods of firing wasn't suitable in cases of aiming at distanced targets. So, he approached them while taking an exemplary shooting position, smoothly getting into the rhythm of rapid gunfire that was engraved deeply into his body from the game.

The sound of Karito's heartbeat and rough breathing was louder than the sounds of gunshots, and the movement of his arm was almost like a conditioned reflex. While sluggishly closing the gap between him and the Alwinan forces little by little, he shot accurately at all soldiers which his eyes could see. Every time he squeezed the trigger, someone would fall down.

He killed, killed and continued to kill them. He didn't even remember how many people he had already killed.

“M-Monster! This guy is a monster. I don’t want to fight someone like this anymore!” One man wailed.

“Immortal... He is immortal! There is no way we can go against such an opponent! We will all be killed!” A soldier yelled agitatedly.

“W-Wait! Don’t falter! We can’t flee when the enemy is standing in front of us! We are proud soldiers of Alwina!” The commander protested.

“Don’t joke around! We are mercenaries! We can’t do anything if we lose our lives!” One of the men shot back angrily.

Amongst all of the soldiers who had turned their backs towards Karito due to indecisiveness, Karito found himself looking at a single entity clad in noticeably superior equipment, shouting from atop his horse.

(That probably is the commander.)

(Strike down the head of the enemy if possible.)

His thoughts regained composure for a moment. He aimed the luminous dot (the bullet will fly towards the figure of the target that was captured by the luminous point) at the commander’s large torso, and shot.

Because of the recoil, several bullets flew upwards and drilled through the commander’s chest, neck, and face. The commander who had his face partially destroyed lurched to the side slowly before sliding down to join the corpses of ordinary soldiers laid out on the wasteland.

That became the decisive blow.

At first, it was only several people, and in the next moment, it became dozens of people. Before long, the survivors of the Alwinan army that amounted to a little less than 300 turned tail at once and fled into the forest.

Originally, the total number was around 750 people, and now it has been reduced to less than half, with a casualty rate of more than 50%. The damage received was to the point that the forces needed to be reorganized. It is amazing that they were able to hold out for so long.

All that had happened fell to the responsibility of the commander who didn't let them retreat, but since he had already compensated with his life, there was no possible way for him to be held responsible any longer.

All the soldiers that were able to move disappeared from Karito's line of sight in a matter of minutes.

What remained in the wasteland were the mountain of corpses and Karito. Other than Karito, there was no other living being. There as a possibility that some injured people were abandoned, but he didn't have any energy left to confirm their deaths one by one now.

Karito needed some time to register the meaning of the scene laid in front of him. He remained on his feet for a while with the HK416 dangling by his side. All he could hear was the sound of his own breath, his heart beating like a drum, and the sound of fire crackling from the continuous smouldering.

"...It's over, huh?" He muttered as he was stood dumbfounded and overwhelmed.

The assault rifle slipped out of his hand, and he stretched his hands to his head to touch his helmet. For a while, he didn't know how to take it off. After a little hardship, he was able to take off his helmet, and turned around slowly to face the heaps of bodies. The moonlight illuminated a massive number of corpses that were scattered around the plain.

He looked back from his original position. A similar landscape spreads out.

His fatigued body felt like it had multiplied in weight as he heaved out a large sigh. As he took a light breath, intense nausea attacked him.

Where he stood was the centre of the area where the war occurred. The bodies of several hundreds of people lay around the surrounding area, the smell of iron rust, guts, as well as gunpowder and flames fused into the strong stench of death. The smell of death struck Karito hard. He had just massacred several hundreds of people.

Even though he understood that he had already turned into a killer a long time ago, feeling it with his five senses now, and being able to withstand it was another issue.

Unable to endure it any longer, he went down onto his knees and regurgitated the contents of his stomach. The ground where his hands touched was awfully damp. If it wasn't for the dark night, he might have noticed that the ground in front of him had turned dark red from the fresh blood it had been doused with.

He wanted to leave this place as soon as possible. But, his body didn't seem to be listening to him. His remaining HP had fallen into a dangerous level by now, but even so, he felt that it was too troublesome to summon a restoration potion to cure himself.

Unable to withstand his fatigue, Karito exerted the last of his strength to avoid the vomit and excretion, and laid on the ground while still wearing the plate armour.

The night sky filled with countless stars and gentle moonlight shone down upon Karito, who was sprawled out right in the middle of this dreadful battlefield. Looking at this scene, he couldn't help but think of how small his existence was.

"...Looks like this is my limit..." The man murmured as he finally fainted in the midst of the mountain of corpses.

CHAPTER 6

PROOF OF WILDNESS

Upon being poked lightly on the head, Karito's consciousness finally returned.

"What is it?" He asked, not understanding the situation while stirring and twisting his pained body, trying to wake up.

When Reona's face appeared from the side, he let out a high-pitched squeak.

"You finally woke up, huh?! Ahhh! Don't make me worry you! You...!" She snarled, hackles rising.

"You! Stop poking my head! O-Oh, right... I guess I fainted, huh?" Karito yelped as he attempted to defend himself.

As he got up like an old man, he noticed that he, Reona, and Rina, who was sitting across Reona, were all in a carriage.

The carriage was made of some sort of wood or bamboo-like material with a covering canopy. In the corner was his HK416 and the helmet which he managed to take off before fainting.

At that moment, Rina grabbed tightly onto Karito's arms, which had become stiff and twice as thick as before due to the bulletproof fibers of the armor. Rina approached with teary eyes, just like when they separated from him at the abandoned fortress.

"I was also worried you know?" The young girl sniffled.

"Ah, sorry. Sorry for making you worried." He could only reply weakly in response.

It seemed that when he had fainted on the battlefield, he was carried onto the carriage, but that still left him with a lot of unanswered questions. Seeing that he wanted an explanation of the circumstances, Reona quickly opened her mouth.

"As you have instructed, after you went out, I ran the opposite direction into the forest

with Rina. But, after running for a while, I was able to make contact with the soldiers who had come to scout the Alwinan Army by chance. It was the troops which my father led. After requesting desperately for them to check on you, we found the pursuers of the Alwinan army retreating hastily, leaving behind a mountain of corpses behind. It was surprising to find you fainted in the middle of it.”

On top of it all, other than not knowing how to take the armor off to check for injuries, they had a hard time loading him onto the carriage because he was heavy; Reona finished her explanation quickly.

In the end, Reona had especially come back for Karito. He didn’t know if he should be angry that she came back even after joining up with a friendly force and missing the chance to escape, or to be happy that she came back despite the risks. Karito was troubled by this thought.

It was inevitable for her to complain about the armor he was equipped with right now (Juggernaut MK3) because while the person equipping it wouldn’t feel it, but in addition to the original bomb suit which was close to 50 kg, there were also bulletproof plates and artificial muscles that add another tens of kilograms to the armour’s weight.

Right now, he was lying in the middle of the carriage with his armor still on while Reona and Rina were seated awkwardly on both sides, squeezing together in the narrow space. By the reason that Karito had been laid down, and the width of the carriage wasn’t adequate, his body size right now was big enough that either his head or feet would have been sticking out of the carriage.

Since the structure of the armor was extremely different compared to the ones in this world, it was obvious for them to be unable to take it off. Rather, if they had tried to take it off by force, would it not be damaged somewhere? Karito felt uneasiness seize his heart.

“How did you even wear that by yourself? I mean, I was curious ever since the time we first met, and where did you take out such armors, weapons and food from?” Reona pestered.

“That’s a trade secret. For the time being, I will take it off.” Karito shrugged.

He took out the PDA and operated it, changing his current monstrous bomb suit into

ordinary camouflage clothes. Rina and Reona were staring at him in amazement as he changed his appearance from what looked like a Daruma doll to forest camouflage clothing in an instant.

“What kind of trick is that?”

“Is it a magic item?”

The sisters demanded.

“No comment. This is probably something only I can do. Leaving that aside, my mouth feels disgusting.” Karito grumbled.

It was reasonable. After all, he vomited all he could before he fainted. A strange aftertaste was spreading inside his mouth, and it felt extremely unsettling.

He took out a PET bottle of mineral water from his item box and rinsed his mouth. As he couldn't just spit it out inside the carriage, Karito lifted up the hood of the carriage and pushed his head out to spit out the contents in his mouth. But, he was a little surprised when he met the face of a person who was walking outside. It was a man with silver hair who gave off an intensely ferocious aura.

“Hmm? Did you wake up already?” The man asked.

“.....” Karito used some hand and body gestures to say ‘I can't talk since there is something inside my mouth right now so please move away a little bit’, and the man with silver hair separated from the carriage obediently as he was told.

Karito spat out the water, making sure that he didn't accidentally splash any onto the man. He looked at the silver haired man as he wiped his mouth.

When he first saw him, because they were too close, he failed to notice that the man was from the Garm Tribe, the same as Reona. His dog ears and tail were the same color as his silver hair. Aside from the chest and shoulder plates that seemed to be made from steel, he didn't seem to be wearing any other articles of clothing, with the exception of the one that covered the back of his hand. Below his chest was a set of abs that even Karito would be jealous of.

“You are the soldier who helped Reona and Rina, isn't it? Thank you very much for

helping these two.” Karito bowed.

“No, no, you don’t need to thank me. Rather, that should be my line.” Karito was quickly stopped by the man.

“Eh?” Karito stared at him in curiosity.

“Thank you for helping my daughters. Reona and Rina are the only mementos left of my wife. On top of helping those children, you challenged the Alwina Forces alone only to let these girls go, and even came out victorious. You have my gratitude from the bottom of my heart for your bravery.” Without stopping but still matching the speed of the carriage, the man who had masculine features like that of a humanized version of a wild wolf lowered his head while saying so.

“You are Reona and Rina’s father?” Karito was rather taken aback.

“Ah, I haven’t introduced myself to the kind benefactor yet. I am Ordy, the platoon leader of the Citadel Defense Force from the Fortress City. Everyone here are my subordinates.” The man with silver hair, Ordy, stretched out his hand.

Karito held out his hand in reflex, and they exchanged a handshake. He had just noticed it, but there seemed to be several soldiers from the Garm tribe besides Ordy, and also several ordinary humans guarding the carriage.

The Garm tribesmen were walking on foot like Ordy, but the human soldiers were riding on horses. It seemed like it was common for the Garm tribe to not ride on a horse and just walk instead. It reminded him that Reona had told him something along this line before.

“Father is a hero who had been awarded a medal by the royal family directly because he had accrued much achievements in the war! Moreover, he is a fenrir with silver fur that is said to be born only once every few hundred years in the Garm Tribe!”

“Uoh! You surprised me!” Reona stuck her face out from behind as she leaned down onto Karito. Karito’s ears buzzed as Reona’s loud voice assaulted his eardrums.

Looking at the action of his daughter, Ordy father showed an angry expression. A pair of sharp canines more developed than any ordinary man peeped out from his lips.

“Reona, what are you doing?! Be more respectful when you are in contact with the benefactor!” He lectured his daughter sternly.

“Kya!? I... I am sorry Father!” Immediately, Reona lowered her head obediently as she parted from Karito’s back.

How should he say it...? As expected of a military official? Their courteous disposition came with strict discipline.

“Sorry. My eldest daughter is overly familiar with anyone.” Ordy apologised.

“No, I didn’t mind. It feels good for me too.” Karito waved off the apology.

When she leaned over his back, there was zero distance between Reona’s breasts and his back. He had carelessly leaked out the second half in a small voice, but Ordy heard it clearly. It has been said before, but the Garm Tribe had superior hearing abilities.

“...Even if it is the benefactor, I will not let you get away if you make a move with such insolent thoughts towards my daughter, okay?” Ordy’s gaze bored into Karito’s frame.

“Sir! I shall engrave it into my heart, sir!” He retracted his head back into the carriage after giving a salute for no reason as he was fairly frightened by the glint in Ordy’s eyes.

However, he remembered that he hadn’t introduced himself as well, and poked his head outside again immediately.

“I am late to introduce myself too. I am Watari Karito. Watari is my surname, and Karito is my given name.” He stated.

“Is that so? It will still take some time before we reach our destination, so can you wait in the carriage with my daughters for a while? If you don’t mind, can you tell me the detailed story again when we arrive?” Ordy requested.

“Of course. I don’t mind at all. Rather, it should be me saying thank you since I was aiming to travel to towns or villages where people live. So, thank you, especially for carrying me who had fainted, and bringing me to a town.” Karito bowed.

When he retreated back again inside the carriage this time, his eyes met Reona’s,

whose gaze was fixed onto me with a fascinated expression.

“Haha, as expected... You are honest despite your face.” Reona said with a smile.

“Well, sorry about that...” Karito muttered.

“But, even I feel surprised, okay? I heard a terrifying sound from the opposite side of the smoke, and when I left Rina with Father’s subordinates and came back to the fort, the fight was already over, and the corpses of the Alwinan army were lying around everywhere. And Karito, you were wearing an odd armor, fainted in the middle of the corpses. I thought that you were planning to take them down with you, and I was really flustered!” Reona exclaimed.

When he heard it, Karito’s expression twisted into a grimace. It was still fresh in his mind that just before he fainted, he had vomited from being unable to endure the shock of having killed an army of people, and collapsed.

He had felt pathetic and horrified. How could he lose his consciousness in such place? Had not it been Reona who came back but a soldier of the Alwinan army who came earlier, Karito would have been killed in his defenseless state. Above everything else, he was frightened of himself who was able to kill hundreds of people in one day.

“Karito... You look like you’re going to cry... Are you alright?” Rina asked, concerned.

“...I am just a little tired. It’s alright, there’s no problem at all.” Karito mumbled.

Despite using the same excuse that had worked in the previous world to dodge the question, Rina’s worried expression had yet to disappear. In fact, her expression turned more sorrowful, to the point where tears were about to burst out any moment.

Then, the outside light was blocked by the hood dimming illumination of the already dark carriage. To be more specific, it was only Karito’s vision that had turned dark, and sticking onto his face was something warm and soft.

Reona had embraced his head, and was burying Karito’s face into her voluptuous valley.

“You’re a strange guy. When you saved us at first, you had killed those people without any mercy.” Reona said softly.

“At that time... It was an emergency. Also, because blood had rushed to my head.” Karito stated, his words muffled.

“By any chance, was that the first time you killed a person?” Reona inquired gently.

“...Yeah...” Karito whispered.

“Because I am not you, I can’t understand your troubles of killing a person.” Reona stated.

“.....” Karito remained silent.

“But, I can tell you this at the very least. To me, what you did wasn’t wrong. Thanks to you, both Rina and I are able to live right now.” The beastwoman declared.

Karito didn’t move, and remained silently embraced by Reona.

“If you are having a hard time, I wouldn’t mind if you vented out it on me. Karito is our benefactor, and isn’t it a woman’s job to take care of a man when he’s weak?” She continued.

For a while, only the sound of wheels running on the unpaved road could be heard from inside the carriage.

Karito stayed silent, and Reona, who vaguely feels as if he was going to disappear somewhere, suddenly strengthened the power of her embrace.

After several dozens of seconds have passed, he finally showed a reaction. He put his hand on Reona shoulder, and started to stir suddenly.

“...!.....!” Muffled, desperate-sounding words could be heard.

“O-Onee-chan? Perhaps you have used too much strength, and you’re strangling him...?”

“Eee?” Reona exclaimed and immediately let go.

When Reona released him, Karito was indeed repeatedly taking deep breaths, as if

trying to devour all the oxygen available.

“I am thankful for the consolation, and was almost in tears, but I also almost died halfway!” Karito gasped, exasperated.

“Ahahaha! Sorry, sorry. Did it help you recover your spirits a bit?” Reona laughed unabashedly.

“...Yeah. I feel much better. Thank you, Reona.” Karito smiled.

“You are welcome.” Reona’s smiling face, coupled with her blonde hair and cheerfulness, was just like the dazzling early summer sun.

In just a few seconds, Karito had stared at Reona to the point he could bore a hole into her, fascinated by Reona’s smile.

“*Cough*, err, anyway, I’m already feeling alright, so, umm, I would be grateful if you could move away from me” Having returned to his senses, Karito pulled himself together when he noticed their present state.

He averted his eyes quite reluctantly from the awkward ambience. Karito was sitting down with both of his legs stretched out, and Reona was kneeling between the space of his legs, her head being in a position taller than Karito. Reona was still in the same appearance even till now, her figure wrapped in tattered pieces of ragged cloth strips.

Only the top half of her breasts were covered, so when he looked up at her, the lower area that wasn’t covered by the rags were exposed to him.

(...Ah, I think I can see the tip...!)

“You are strangely a late bloomer on certain matters, aren’t you? If you are that interested in it, I don’t mind if you want touch it or not.” Reona laughed.

“Even if you say so, I am troubled when you are being so open-minded about it! Also, I can’t do such a thing in front of your little sister!” Karito protested, completely red.

“D-Don’t mind me. If it’s Karito and onee-chan, then it can’t be helped...” Rina blushed.

“Please, don’t approve of it! And don’t pretend to cover your eyes! I can see your eyes

peeking through from the gap of your finger as well!" Karito shouted.

Betrayed by an unexpected factor, Karito was thrown into great turmoil. Even if he was given permission by the person herself and the people around him, with Karito's limited experience with women, there was no way he could handle progress beyond something he could do.

"You have the bravery to fight against hundreds of soldiers for our sakes, yet it's so strange that you have no courage to touch a woman's breasts." Reona remarked, mystified.

"This matter and that matter are different! Plus, you shouldn't let men touch your body when you've just met him for one day!" Karito scolded.

Depending on how one should interpret it, she could have flown into a rage, but Reona only tilted her head thoughtfully and calmly answered despite the lecture.

"I don't mind in particular. Karito's face isn't that bad, and you are also our benefactor. Above all, you are strong."

"...Strong? Me?" This time, it was Karito's turn to tilt his head, puzzled.

If he was really strong, he would not be in this place. Because, just before he crushed the faces of those bullies, he had been continuously oppressed.

He was able to beat the Alwinan army thanks to his weapons and equipment, and even the revival medicine which brought Rina back to life was also an item from. Anyone could have used the various items from that game. Only using tools wouldn't require any special power at all. Karito ridiculed himself.

"You saved Rina who was dying, and you were able to gain victory over several hundred soldiers and the Sky Cavalry alone. Can such a guy be a weak?" Reona asked.

"...That isn't my power. It was all thanks to the weapons." Karito replied sullenly.

"But, we don't have anyone who can use such weapons. Surely that is also one of your strengths, I think." In the dim carriage, Reona's eyes glittered like a full moon in the dark night.

Her smile was like a succubus feeding on men's vitality, but her eyes were like a beast that has found its prey.

Leaning over, Reona brushed the tip of her nose against Karito's forehead. Her appearance was overflowing with a wild charm compared to her usual appearance. He couldn't even smell any unpleasant smell from her body even though she had not cleansed herself for one night. Rather, he was intoxicated by her smell. As the feminine scent of a bittersweet fruit entered his nose, Karito felt as if his reasoning and logic had received a strong blow.

"For females, they have instincts that demand sperm from strong males. That is why you are more than welcome to put your hands on me." Reona smiled.

Now that she mentioned it, in class, there were always girls hanging around the bad boys... Does this resemble that? Karito dug into his memories of the time which he wanted to seal up. It was half to escape reality.

"Even so, please don't say something like that when there are other people around! Also, can you not speak so vividly like that in front of your little sister?!" Karito yelled, feeling aggrieved.

"Are we not of the appropriate age? Not only for us of the Garm Tribe, it is also the same everywhere. Even Rina will understand it sooner or later." The beastwoman tilted her head to the side.

"I... I will do my best!" Rina sounded fired up.

"What do you mean do your best?!" Karito hugged his head.

"In addition, although father was devoted to mother even after mother's death, he was often surrounded by young mistresses asking for his seed in the past." Reona reported nonchalantly.

"Are you serious?!" Karito groaned.

"Did you call for me?" Ordy poked his head in.

"Even though I didn't call you, but nice timing!" Karito did a thumbs up.

Under the uncommon experience of being approached by a humble yet extremely underdressed beauty (a gorgeous girl to be exact), Karito could feel the tension slowly driving him berserk.

However, Ordy's appearance was like a helping hand for the present Karito. He wanted him to put a stern stop to his daughter here.

"...I have roughly understood the story. Karito, you!" Ordy pointed at Karito.

"Y-YES!" He saluted reflexively once more.

"I have said just a few minutes ago that 'I will not let you get away if you make passes at my daughter with such insolent thoughts'... However, I would like to respect my daughter's wishes as much as possible as well." Ordy stated.

"...Yes?" The sky suddenly became dark for Karito.

"If I could, I would like to ascertain your personality a little bit more, but judging from the conversation so far, I, too, feel that you might have good prospects for the future. This is because someone who is able to understand the limits of one's actions without becoming conceited by power is pretty rare." Ordy continued.

"Haa..." Karito sighed in disbelief.

"Reona, too, is already an excellent adult who has undergone the 'Moonlight Ceremony' several years ago. I had thought to choose a promising man from my subordinates and the village to pair up with her soon, but..." Ordy was cut off by his subordinate's shout.

"Captain! The city is in view!"

Curious about the report, Karito rolled up the hood again and poked his neck out.

The destination that the carriage was advancing to was a city surrounded by tall and long walls, its size several times that of the fort that they had escaped into last night. This scene was clearly visible to the naked eyes from afar.

"Amazing..." Karito's awed words fell from his lips unconsciously as he gazed at the big city surrounded by magnificently sturdy stone walls for the first time.

At the back, Reona and Rina showed their faces in succession, their eyes sparkling upon gazing at the majestic scene

“That is the fort city ‘Citadel’. Sorry, but we will continue this talk when we have the time after we arrive. Let’s discuss it slowly.” Ordy left them to their awe, and continued guarding the carriage.

CHAPTER 7

SHOWGIRL

This citadel was just like its name, [Fortress], it was a city fortified by two stages of castle walls.

The city was built three-hundred years ago, back when the territory of the Belcania Allied Nations was smaller and the Alwina Kingdom's border was more inland.

The fort city was originally built as a large scale frontal base, built as a power demonstration for the Alwina Kingdom that repeatedly provoked and launched small-scale attacks near the border.

Before long, the power of the Alwina Kingdom was sapped little by little by the cooperation of the nations. With the borderline shifting, the importance of this Citadel as a frontal base also gradually decreased. This was roughly around one-hundred fifty years ago.

Furthermore, as time rolled by, the people from the Belcania Allied Nation came and built some villages amidst the Alwina Kingdom's former land.

Therefore, traveling merchants started to use the Citadel as a relay point to procure local specialities. Eventually, the number of the population started growing.

Following the course of time, the number of soldiers slowly decreased and the merchants negotiated with the Commander of the base in order to borrow the facilities and sites that weren't used. Soon, people were drawn by the products and started to gather at this base where money and people flourished.

When the buildings were no longer able to accommodate the population, the people started building their own houses and shops. Thereby the number of structures kept expanding———and in the end it became the present-day fortress city.

"Now it is being used as a relay base to send substitute personnel and supplies to the border, merchants and veteran soldiers also gathered here from the villages surrounding the Citadel, and that makes it really lively..... But not anymore."

“Because there are not much people besides the soldiers huh?”

“It is because the information regarding the Alwina Army’s invasion quickly approaching has been spread long time ago. However, even though the residents had taken refuge in the opposite direction of town, there are still a large number of population left in the middle of evacuation. At the very least, it’s good if we could complete the evacuation before the Alwina Army arrives here.....”

With Ordy’s sign, Karito was able to witness the present state of the town inside the Fortress city while he concluded the explanation for his first visit to the Citadel.

Just like the story from this two people, the former bustling Citadel completely disappeared, and you can’t even find a shadow of a regular citizen wandering in the streets. The only people they passed on the street was a guard equipped with a weapon and armor, and a mercenary who came here after sniffing out the scent of money from this war.

They were advancing through the main street towards the center of the town, even though the shops were still open, not many people can be seen. It seemed that the residents of this area quickly evacuated the moment they heard that the Alwina Army was approaching.

Nevertheless, for Karito, it's still rare to see Middle Ages Europe like buildings, build with stones and bricks within modern Japan. There were also townscapes with wooden buildings crowded with soldiers of various race.(There were normal humans, women with tails and ears, with wings, quadrupedalism, and some other seldom seen humanoids.) It was interesting just to watch. Reona and Rina eyes shine. The world outside their village was totally oblivious to them for many years.

Under tight security, these three people seemed to be content to be able to enjoy the landscape plenty enough. Ordy can’t help but gave a wry smile to these three people.

With Ordy’s subordinate as a guide, Karito and co arrived at the previous City Hall where government officials do their administration work——— located adjacent to the Defense Force barracks.

Originally, the City Hall was the frontline headquarters back in the olden days. It was turned back into headquarters with the invasion of the Alwina Army so there were a

lot of people going in and out from the building.

Before long, they arrived at the barracks. The former headquarters made out of stone, now became a City Hall and barracks at the same time. It was surrounded by deep moats and had the atmosphere of being the last defense. The carriage stopped in front of the barracks across the bridge, the building seemed like a mid scale elementary school building.

“I need to make a report at the headquarters. My subordinate will guide you to the barracks, you three can take a rest in a vacant room. The others can store back or tend their equipment for the next operation.”

“I understand, Father”

“I will be under your care”

They separated from Ordy, and went inside the barracks together with the soldiers they were assigned with.

There were a lot of soldiers coming and going hastily in the barracks. Karito was surprised when he saw a boy around junior high school, carrying bundles of sheathed longsword that passed by him. Even though he looked liked in lower position, but that child was also a soldier?

Eventually, they arrived at their destination, it was a room located at the corner of the three story building. There was a desk and chair, two bunk beds, and a long wooden box which can be used to hold stuff and can be used as a chair or desk, it was a simple layout overall.

“I am sorry, but this is the only available room that is good enough to be used as a sleeping quarter. Because of the Alwina invasion, by the orders from the Royal Capital, many reinforcements have arrived here , so there is insufficient numbers of bed.”

“Err, in short.....?”

“I want you three to share this room. I understand that you guys are the daughters and the benefactor of the Captain, however we can't do anything now. Can you please endure it?”

“Is it not okay if we sleep on father's room? If it's alright, we don't need to use this room.”

“The problem is... Because there are highly classified important reports there, so even if you are a family of the Captain, we can't allow you, an outsider, to enter the room.”

“Then it can't be helped. Ah, can you at least bring a hot water and a towel? We ran inside the forest and we want to clean up even if it's only for my younger sister.”

“Then, I will bring it later. Please wait a moment.”

“Sorry for the trouble.”

The soldier left. Reona heaved a heavy sigh and dived into the lower bed, Karito and Rina also sat down on the wooden box and sighed from fatigue.

“““So tired.....”””

The three groaned in unison without a single word difference. They had been chased all night fighting desperately, they also got involved in a massacre, so it was natural to accumulate fatigue. It was hard to relax in the carriage when they were being tormented by the irregular shaking, and it was like an oven inside.

Exhaustion burst out at once as the three people took a posture they felt the best to relax. Karito stretched out both of his legs as he leaned on the wall, as for Reona, she was lying face down on the bed, her beast ears and tail didn't even twitch because of fatigue. However, in case of these two people, the fatigue wasn't physically, but mentally.

Amongst them, Rina, who was the youngest didn't have much strength and started to doze off while sitting straight, and fell to Karito's thigh who was sitted next to her and buried her face there. Before long, the sound of even breathing can be heard.

“Looks like she is really tired. Sorry Reona, please move a little bit.”

“Nn.....”

After Reona reluctantly raised her body to make a space, Karito lightly lifted the small body of Rina and carried her to the bed. She didn't even stir up from all this motion.

While the older sister of the girls was feeling lazy herself, she still combed the hair of the girl who had the same color as herself while smiling.

“We are able to escape to father’s place and felt relieved for a while. But, those guys from the Alwina Army will invade here again immediately...”

“However, I think it will take a little while for the Alwina Army to be able to invade again.”

“Why is that?”

“It is because of me. Because I killed a lot of soldiers there, though I didn’t know the overall percentage, they still lost several hundred soldiers in the unexpected battle, so it will not be strange if they are in state of confusion right now.”

“That is true I guess. Doesn’t that means that you can stale the Alwina Army by yourself!?”

“I didn’t know how much time I would be able to buy. I do not know how many their total force have either.”

Karito said so responding to Reona’s praise, while he returned back to the wooden box completely exhausted.



Because the opponent wasn't a gathering of bandits or militiamen, but a full-fledged regular army of a country, Karito can't imagine how he can take them on no matter how much he thinks about it.

They possibly can be numbered in tens of thousands. However, Karito doesn't know the strength of Alwina Kingdom in detail so he can only guess about it. It is a bad move to underestimate the enemy's strength, but it is not good to overestimate it either.

"Karito, what do you intend to do after this?"

"That is difficult question. I don't have anywhere to go. What will Reona do after this?"

"Well, I am thinking of asking my father to put me in the defense army of this city."

Reona said without hesitation as she punched her palm with her fist.

Without mistake, her eyes were blazing in revenge.

"Just running around doesn't suit me, above all, I won't stop until I destroy the Alwina Army that invaded and massacred everyone from the village with my own hands. I won't stop even if father stopped me!"

"What will you do with Rina? Neglecting her isn't possible right?"

"Au, that is right as expected. But to this point, but, I only left the opponent to Karito until now. If I don't do anything, I will disgrace Garm Tribe's name....."

Reona who had her body exposed fell into depression as her animal ear drooped down completely. He can see a mortified aura emitting from around her.

"I understand Reona's feeling and I didn't intend to stop you to take revenge, but I think you need to at least make first priority things first."

"I know that much, but still... Arrgh everything is the fault of those Alwina bunch!!"

'uuU000~~~!!!' Reona gave a shout of anger that sounded like a wolf howl, what Karito worried was not that the voice leaked outside the room.

"Stupid, shh, shhh! Rina-chan is sleeping you know!"

“So, sorry. I just can’t endure it.”

“Luckily there is no one outside, or we will get misunderstood, but———”

Just when Karito felt uneasy about it, the door room was suddenly kicked down by force.

“What happened here!?”

Ordy’s subordinate who brought Karito & co, burst into the room.

In one of his hand was a bucket of hot water which was requested by Reona and the cloth that will be used to wipe her body. The cloth seemed to be of much higher quality than the one that was used to wrap Reona’s body, and his other hand already extended to the sword on his waist.

“No, no, there is nothing! Reona is just got heated up a bit, please don’t mind it!”

“Is, is that so. If possible please refrain to do such thing. Because the invasion army can attack in any time, everyone is already on edge. Here is the hot water and towel that you asked. If you need anything else please look for me, we do not know if we can supply anything you need, but we will do the best we can.”

“Thank you very much.”

The soldier quickly left while receiving Karito’s bow.

At the same time as the door closes, the sound of cloth being removed can be heard behind him. Then he looked back thinking what happened.

“.....”

“N? Karito, why didn’t you undress?”

The knot of the rag cloth which was covering her breast was unfastened (because it was tied and fastened on her back, so it was possible to take it off immediately.) and the naked body of Reona was exposed right in front of Karito.

Karito blank out as Reona was now working on the cloth that was substituted for the loin cloth that covered the lower half of her body. He thereby became panicked and

tried to stop her with his hand.

Because Karito inevitably came closer to Reona's side, it's now impossible to look directly without looking at Reona's abundant breast that was not covered by anything from the valley to the tip, it was out of his calculations.

He can feel her warmth through his nose, and his crotch started to heat up unintentionally. Calm down my body, no matter what it is, it is still too early for any accidental discharge.

“Why on earth did you start undressing!”

“Why, because I want to clean my body, isn't that natural?”

“It is not, that's not what I mean. Normally you wait until I get out or you will ask ‘I want to wipe my body so please get out.’ After that you can undress, isn't that normal!”

“In the village this was natural.”

What?

“While I was drawing water to fill the tub and was taking a bath, the people from other houses always come around, it was also common for girls and guys to bath in the nearby river together. Is it different from Karito's place?”

“What an envio... no no that is not it.”

Now that she mentioned it, Karito remembered vaguely what he read in manga and saw in historical dramas that in Japan's Edo period, the public bath was usually a mixed bath.

However, isn't this world too easy going about sexuality? No, maybe it is just common in a remote village? Or maybe it is just Reona, Karito wasn't able to distinguish it since he didn't have any cultural knowledge of this world.

When he thought about Reona's personality that was very aggressive, maybe it was the latter.

“This is the most popular time in the village. When I was taking a bath, young men

from the village came in droves. But these guys only hide at the back, peeking at us and don't want to come out so it wasn't interesting.

“Isn’t that a crime of conscience?”

It was absolutely the latter.

He was half amazed, half headache, Karito was in trouble about what he needed to do and had fallen silent, Reona took this chance to unfasten her waistcloth.

Before Karito was able to stop her, Reona already threw that one piece of rag cloth to the bed. What was left on her body was only a small white underwear that covered her secret part.

“A, a thong!?”

“Because this is much easier to move and take off.”

Reona damped the cloth with hot water and start to wipe her body while humming as she didn’t think much about Karito who has trembled with fear.

The warm cloth which had been soaked with warm water was used to wipe Reona’s healthy light-brown skin, a result of her spending time in the forest for dozens of years. Reona’s voluptuous body under normal circumstances was already filled with a woman’s charm, however looking at this scene where her body became wet increased it even more. Karito had been utterly fascinated by this scene that his reasoning wouldn’t work anymore.

Her arm, shoulder, from her armpit to the back of her neck, and then to her breast. Reona’s finger especially lept over from that swelling part. Her damp swelling part seemed to be sparkling and resembled a peach which had been cooled down inside the cold water. The shaking of her cherry colored tip looked so inviting.

“Even though you are a good man, you sweat up so much so easily”

Reona deliberately complained with a louder voice to Karito who became intoxicated while she lifted up her breast with her free hand to wipe the underside.

The arm was holding it in a way as if she wanted to show it off to Karito, or more

precisely she was showing off, how that soft pair of hills were changing shape. Reona's hand traced the part which had been lifted and was exposed to air. Not only the underside of the breast, she also wiped off the sweat and dirt on the valley and the side carefully. It seemed like she was quite diligent in contrast with her personality and outer appearance.

Before long, Reona finished cleaning the area around her chest and her hand started to move down. She moved it around her stomach which only had a little bit fat and was covered with strong abs that was overflowed with wild charm, and Reona slender finger continued to slide down.

"You know Karito."

"Fuel!? W, what!?"

When he heard someone call him, Karito was like a tuna who was being pulled to the deck and his body began to bounce up and down. Even though Reona is a dog, no a wolf literally, she looked more like a mysterious cat as she had a bewitching smile pasted on her face as their eyes met.

"Sorry, but can you lend me a hand for a while? Because I can't see my back so I didn't know if it will be clean enough, so can Karito help me clean my back instead?"

"What... did... You say?"

This Ero wolf girl, Reona turned her back suddenly. Her waist shook to the left and right matched with her golden hair tail as if to provoke Karito to hurry on.

He thought of running away from this place so many times already.

But, Karito wasn't able to do that. Reona's womanly charm was wildly attacking Karito, and his manly instinct had already been caught tightly.

Inevitably, it had gone too far past his limit. Now, it was impossible for Karito to refuse Reona's 'request'.

When he noticed it, the wet cloth was already being held on his hand. Just like a light trapping an insect, Karito approached Reona's back with shaky steps.

“(..... mou, It's already okay to be at ease right?)”

Karito had been too excited that he absolute could not calm himself down.

The blood concentrated more at the lower half of his body than in his head. In this state, Karito gun that was loaded a long time ago will discharge its first bullet anytime soon. Rather, he was afraid that he will accidentally discharge it.

Incidentally, originally Karito flesh limit was.38 caliber for self defense, however now it had grown splendidly to a 6 inch barrel.44 magnum. He dared not mention what this part was.

Karito who had made up his mind touched Reona's back.

“Ah, there there, that feels good. It is all right if you do it stronger.”

“Is, is that so. How about like this?”

“Yeah, around there. Just right in the itchy part, I was saved.”

Karito first impression when he held Reona was being surprised that her body was much softer than expected.

Even though her body was filled with wild charm and her body was quite muscular, contractually to it when he touched her skin all her swelling muscle didn't give an impression of being hard.

It was a wonder where all that burst of power came from this girl, after feeling her body for more than ten minutes, all he felt was its femininity. Even though her skin was unusually smooth and he was permitted to touch all he wants, he have to hold it since it's uncomfortable enough to stroke that smooth skin.

What Karito can attune was that there were no useless part in her body. Other than her tempestuous breast and round bottom, no excess fat can be seen. No matter where he touched, it was soft and supple, Karito had a hard time to get rid of this rude idle thought.

He never had experienced touching a nude female body before, so Karito can't compare it since this was his first time. He wondered if all the women in this world

was like this? Or it is just Reona who was special?

“(well, for now...)”

As his wipes were going lower, he caught a sight of her bushy tail shaking to the left and right. Its root grew between her lumbar vertebrae and around her sacrum. Her naked ass which wasn't covered with underwear matched with her shaking tail was trying to tempt him.

Karito raised his face and wanted to ask Reona with his eyes. When Reona noticed and met his eyes, she answered with bewitching smile like an evil woman trying to tempt a man.

What was with that smile. Does she try to tell him to continue? This Ero wolf.

“Err, I think Reona alone is enough from this point.?”

“It is okay, you should continue while at it.”

“No, no, that is not the problem. If I continue more than this it will lose strength!”

Reona turned around to answer him. She turns her line of sight downward.

“Far from losing strength, it seems like it is brimming in vitality. As expected, it is a very excellent thing.”

“No no seriously, this isn't something you casually look at, it's embarrassing! Please be more embarrassed!”

Her two mountainous bulges shook furiously when she turned around. Even though it wasn't the size of watermelons, it was still around the size of small melons, and its hang there pointing upwardly.

When he looked at it there was a little bit extra, although it was late to notice now, but the piece of cloth that was substituted for underwear covering the most important part became transparent. Karito reflectively stared at it and can identify an existence of grass that had the same color as her hair and tail over her cloth.

Because of such scene, he can feel something start to accumulated in his nose. Rather,

he was at his limit.

“I, I will go outside!”

“Ah, wait!”

*bam, Karito back disappeared to the other side of door as he closed it.

Even Reona can't remember how embarrassed she was after showing her naked body to a man alone. It's not to the extent of going out outside at her father's workplace nude.

Maybe I teased him a little bit too much. Or rather, I welcomed it if he became excited and attacked me.”

Don't forget the existence of your sister, you.

CHAPTER 7.5

INTERMISSION: ORDY REPORT

Adjacent to the barracks is the headquarters which had regained back its former role. Various tribes and their representatives gathered in the meeting room established on the topmost floor of the six story building.

In front of the people surrounding the table, Ordy was standing straight at ease, the table was shaped like the topography of the map, a diorama of model pieces representing every enemy and friend, their tribe and numbers.

“Then, begin the report.”

A man past middle age who had been sent from the Imperial City to act as a mayor who will manage the politics of this fort city urged Ordy.

“First, the position of the Alwina Army Headquarters is around here when my subordinate scouted it... they had set a camp here, about an hour by horse from Shrem Village.”

Shrem Village is the name of village where Reona and Rina used to live.

——— so it is correct to express it with past tense now.

“They are already that near!? Then they could attack this place within the early morning of the day after tomorrow at the soonest!”

The one who had snorted and barked loudly at Ordy’s report was his senior officer, a male Centaur who was the Commander of Citadel Defence Force.

He displayed a muscular human upper body and his lower body had a fairly large horse frame too, being a race much bigger than human beings, his head seemed to be nearly rubbing against the ceiling.

“There should be villages in the area, did they destroy them as well ?”

The person wearing a jet black robe with complex gold-thread pattern asked.

Judging from that person's voice, you can determine that it was a woman's voice, but as her face was covered behind the robe, it was hard to discern whether she was an old or a young woman.

Her slender lady-like fingertips knocked on the frame of the topographic map. The colour of her skin was so pale surpassing that of a deadman's, her skin only had a distinctive bluish-white color without a shred of complexion.

"When we arrived at Shrem Village it was already..... aside from my daughters and another villager, what remained was of catastrophic condition. I would assume that the other villages are in a similar fate."

"That is a disaster. I am glad that your daughters are safe, but still it is a cruel experience for those young children. After settling down this issue, you should take a break and accompany those children."

"Yes, thank you very much."

The tone of the woman in robes was similar to those old fogies than Reona's vulgarity.

The mayor wore a difficult expression while stroking his goatee that grew from his chin.

"Then it must have meant that the Alwina force was able to procure considerable amount of supplies from the villages they attacked. The villages around this region mostly have food as their special product."

"The food situation of this city is depending mostly from that area. What is the Imperial City's thoughts regarding this matter?"

"Originally, this city is a frontline base for anti-Alwina forces therefore, the supply line isn't being neglected. And to suffice the adequate scale of supplies being transported, the roads had been taken care of as well."

The one who answered was a nervous young man with glasses, a messenger sent from the Imperial City as a reinforcement.

As a representative of the Belkan Allied Nation's leader, he had a power much higher than the mayor of this city.

"We don't have to worry about our supplies right now. What is the exact number of the Alwina force?"

"Yes ———— considerably large. According to my subordinate, there are at least two divisions."

The meeting room was covered in complete silence in an instant, to the extent not even a breath could be heard.

In this world, the allocation of soldiers within a unit was as follows:

A Company consisted of 200 people.

A Battalion consisted of 600 people.

A Regiment consisted of 2,000 people.

A Brigade consisted of 4,000 people.

A Division consisted of 10,000 people.

In other words, according to Ordy's report, the number of Alwina forces that will attack the fort city of Citadel would amount to more than twenty thousand troops.

"Where on earth could they have gathered all those soldiers from!"

"They had probably hired quite a lot of mercenaries. The Imperial City obtained the information that Alwina had been secretly recruiting all human mercenaries from all regions, with the reward several-fold than that of the market price."

"After all, they always have a good financial state even in the past. It could have been from the remains of the gold, silver, copper, and treasures from the mines and lands that they have completely robbed when they ruled as a large nation long ago."

"It is not only just human soldiers. From the report, there are also Orcs and Trolls mixed in their unit."

“Orcs and Trolls! They are going to be troublesome!”

The one that raised a voice so loud that it could numb the ears, was a short Dwarf with a thick mustache covering his face.

He was not a soldier from the regular unit, but a representative of the voluntary army who had rushed there upon hearing the invasion of the Alwina forces. Wearing a strong, thick chest and shoulder plates, it indeed showed that he was a veteran soldier.

However, because of their racial characteristic and weakness caused by their height that was comparably similar to that of a child, him alone stood on a platform just to be able to peer onto the topographic map. The scene where his manliness was coupled with his atmosphere seemed to be on a mismatch.

The remark of the Dwarf soldier seemed to be the reflection of all the thoughts of the members.

“To think that the Alwina forces employed demi-humans, not to mention they are Orcs and Trolls.....”

“What a bunch of bloodthirsty animals! Anyways, their aim is to increase the slaughter for sure!”

In this world, except from the Alwina Kingdom and a minute portion of humans, for the demi-humans and other tribes to co-exists together had become the norm, only Orcs and Trolls remained the representative of demi-humans that was still detested for many years.

They both shared the common point of having hideous appearances. Both carried a large build and their brute strength far surpassed those of humans and other races. They possessed great stamina, and most crucially, a strong impulse for slaughter. Through the ages, there had been many cases where villages and caravans fell as their victim.

What made them even more troublesome was the fact that they were fairly intelligent despite their ferocious nature. They would divide into factions and freely used simple battle tactics to attack. If you become careless, the tables could turn against you. There were past records where people employed Trolls and Orcs into the army where in

return, they were given the authority to do as they please in the land seized as a spoil of war.

Be it a man, child, or the elderly, they would be massacred on impulse. If not, they would be eaten alive. In the case of young women, they usually would end up being taken away to their base for breeding purposes.

Yes, Trolls and Orcs would take humans and demihuman women alike and impregnate them by force to increase their number.

“In the end, I think they will only be used as sacrificial pawns. Do you know the size of their mage unit?”

“According to the report, their mage unit is no smaller than a battalion. In addition, it is reported that the scale of the Sky Cavalry is of the same size.”

“Another grand scale huh.”

The existence called magicians in this world referred to a person who utilized spirit magic to perform magic canons and other long distance attacks. So to speak, instead of firing with cannons, they are recognized as firing arms using staffs and magic.

Out of two hundred to three hundred people, one would be born with the abilities to manipulate spirits better than the rest. This was the qualities of those that can become magicians.

Regarding spirit magic, there existed a huge wall between human beings, the demi-humans, and other races.

With the exception of Elves who excelled in controlling spirit magic than humans, the demi-humans were unable to release the spirits from their body. That was their one weakness.

To be more specific, even though demi-humans were able to use spirit magic, they can't use it to attack for long distances as compared to human magicians. The specific cause wasn't clear.

It was also the very reason that allowed the Alwina Kingdom to be able to oppress the demi-humans despite their superior physical strength, and rule over the majority of

the continent.

The spirit magic that the demi-humans were able to use was mainly physical strengthening. Even when their tough physical strength was reinforced, if they were bombarded one-sidedly with long range attacks, there was no way that they could win.

Even when portions of humans who can't remain indifferent to the oppression to other tribes joined hands with the demi-humans to revolt, the Alwina Kingdom could still manage to thrive on ruling the continent as they possessed the knowledge of long distance magic mechanisms. Even until now, where a large part of the information had already been leaked out to other countries, Alwina Kingdom was still one step ahead with the techniques of long-distance offensive spirit magic.

Furthermore, for some reason, humans with the talent to become magicians were easily born into Alwina Kingdom. Thus, the ratio of magicians in their armed forces was considerably higher than the army of other countries.

With the cooperation of other countries, they were able to cope with the military offense of the Alwina forces so far by attacking multiple times simultaneously, distributing their war power. Slowly crushing them over a long period of battle gained them the upper hand.

—————But, it seems that their limit is near.

The flow of war was tilting in favour of the Alwina Army.

“What is our current war potential?”

“There is 2,500 Defense Force stationed here, the reinforcement that was sent from Imperial Capital at present is four thousand. The total Sky Cavalry till now is around one hundred people, furthermore, the same amount of soldiers are being sent along with the supplies, but it would take them at least three days to organized the unit to march.”

“What about the voluntary army?”

“Up until now, it is around five hundred people. More than half of them are from races other than humans, and they would be more than pleased to exchange blows when they see the opponent's face, but the Orcs and magician units could be rather

problematic.

“How many magicians are there available for us to use in this defensive war?”

The young representative looked at the women in robe.

“At present, the ones adept enough is a platoon consisting of thirty people. Even if you include me, we would still be in a disadvantage.”

Even though her face couldn't be seen, she probably had a shameful frown. It can easily be noticed from her tone.

Seven thousand troops against twenty thousand troops. The difference between the fighting power is nearly threefold.

Even though the side holding the defensive war was usually on the upper hand, that advantage would be diminutive in comparison to the large difference in fighting power.

Above all, the difference in power between the magicians and Sky forces are too much. The difference of the magician's power equaled to the difference of firing power. Especially for magicians to deal with fixed targets like fortresses and towns sieges, with just a small number of elite magicians they could easily make one or two castle towns vanish, not to mention that there was also the Sky Cavalry as well.

Besides, about half of the magicians were mixed in the Sky Cavalry unit, so in reality they had another three hundred people's worth of war potential added there.

In other words, the Defense Force was in an overwhelming disadvantage right now.

“Did you found out who is the commander that is going to lead the invasion force? Could it perhaps be the new king in question that commands directly? If it is so, then the situation is grave.”

The room fell silent once again.

Aside from Ordy, the very person who scouted the Alwina Army with his own eyes when the moment he shook his head, everyone sighed in relief. At the very least it was not the worst situation.

For a moment, but.

“No. When my subordinate scouted it, they weren’t able to discover it.”

When Ordy’s platoon approached Shrem Village, Rezado’s corpse had already been wrapped in cloth and sent to the Alwina Forces Headquarters who had arrived earlier.

“Perhaps it was the trusted generals of the new King who had led them... However there are several things that I need to report.”

“What is it? Because of the urgent situation, please make it brief.”

He continued his report without faltering from the young man’s sharp remark.

“——— actually, there was a person who had engaged in war with the Alwina Forces before we could capture them.”

“What? Is there a unit who was making a sortie beside your unit?”

“It is unlikely. I didn’t give a scout order besides Ordy’s unit, and even them are also permitted to engage in combat either. But it could have been locals who acted on their own accord after hearing the invasion of the Alwina force.”

“Is there any clue about the guy who moves about without permission and clashed against them?”

“...Yes. His identity is still unverified, but we have discovered the traces of an unknown power and battle with the Alwina forces.”

“And then?”

“Around the empty fort for travelers, distanced at around half a day from the citadel by foot, we found corpses of Magicians and Sky Cavalry units, as well as a company (around 200 people). We had also identified a commander in chief class body as well”

They became silent for the third time.

They looked at each other eyes, at loss on how they should react to the news, and

turned back towards Ordy again.

“Is this the truth?”

“Yes. I have confirmed it with my own eyes. A lot of bodies were in pieces, and there are at least a platoon (30 People) of magician unit included in the Alwina force that had been annihilated.”

“For a battle of such scale to have happened, surely you would have notice it have you?”

“Yes, however when we heard the noise of the intense battle and arrived at the site, the battle had already ended. There were numerous corpses of soldiers scattered around, traces of multiple explosions around the fortress, and countless footprints of people and horses at the forest away from the fort. I assumed from the circumstance that there is a high possibility that the Alwina Army retreated in a stampede after receiving the big blow in just a short time.”

“In other words, this unknown power was able to crush at least one company of Alwina force that includes a magician unit.”

“I have never heard of any story or rumors about a power that could win against several hundreds of enemy hiding around the area. Who is this guy? I would like to see the face of such a person ”

The robed woman turned her face towards Ordy. Her eyes seemed to gleam with a light of that a cat which had found its prey from the shadows of a dark night.

Even under the stare of such eyes, Ordy stood in attention, not shaking a single hair.

“Be it a win with quantity or quality, at least we could assume that he is hostile towards the Alwina Forces!”

“Can we leave aside the identity of this mysterious power for the moment? Captain Ordy, there is one thing I would like to ask. Are you sure that the commander’s body that you found was really of a high ranking general?”

“There is no mistake about it. Judging from his equipment and uniform, we are certain that he was fairly of a high ranking class.”

“If that is the case, there is likely a confusion to occur within the chain of commands of the Alwina forces to some extent. It would be good if things were to stay like that until our reinforcement arrives.”

“Even so, we can’t keep depending on such accidents either. We will need to buff our defenses as much as possible before the Alwina forces attacks!”

“In case where the enemy are to break through our outer defenses, what about building barricades along the main roads of the evacuation area? Even stuff made with haste, it could stall the enemy for a while at least.”

“In that case, we should enforce the defense of wide roads where their magician troops are more likely to pass ————”

The contents of the meeting gradually shifted from Ordy’s report to the discussion about the defenses of the fort city.

The women in robes left the mayor, centaurus. and the dwarf representative who were busy arranging the diorama pieces around the fort city on the topographic map in a heated discussion, and came towards Ordy’s side and whispered.

“So, what is it that you are hiding? It is unusual for little boy to tell a lie.”

“As expected, you have seen through it. And please stop calling me little boy”

“Fu fu fu, isn’t it fine? After all it is the truth. No matter how much you have aged , it is not as if the difference in the gap between us would shrink.

“

“Maa, you don’t need to bother explaining it. I can find it out for myself, since I could sense an unfamiliar presence immediately.”

“.....please don’t make a disturbance as much as possible. He is the benefactor of my daughters.”

“Alright.”

“—————I will convey the words from the king.”

Inside the tent that was used as the center of the mobile tactical meeting of the Alwina forces, a dignified voice of a woman resounded.

In front of the woman knight with a long crimson hair darker than the fresh blood and fiercer than any flame, tied in ponytail, the chief commanders who led the invasion forces to the Belcan Allied power were kneeling on the ground with their heads lowered deeply before her.

She wore a mithril armor that gave off a dazzling silver color, and at her waist was a long sword with a precious stone embedded on its hilt.

From her point of view their faces were hidden in a glance, but even without looking, it was easy to imagine one from the shivers of their frightened shoulders that they were breaking in cold sweat.

She coldly looked at their unsightly figures and declared.

“——— Three days. Capture the enemy’s base in three days, and the king will show mercy to you bastards who were unable to protect the king’s younger brother.”

“Is, is that the truth!!!?”

“Are you doubting me who was given a message directly by the king?”

“The, there is no way!”

“Then move quickly. time is limited.”

CHAPTER 8

MAGICIAN OF THE DEAD

“Haaa~~~~~..... What to do from now on huh?”

Since there were nobody nearby, there was no way that there could be someone to answer his complains.

Karito sat down on the stairs that led to the roof. Besides himself, everyone else were busy, going back and forth in preparation against the Alwina Army invasion. Being unable to endure the boredom anymore, he stood up to find a place where he could be alone, resulting in his arrival at this desolated place.

Guards were assigned on the rooftops which made him barely alone. As a result, he arrived at this half baked place.

He guessed that he would just give up and go back to Reona’s room when the next shift of guards comes.

“.....but, honestly it was a little bit regrettable isn’t it?”

He remembered Reona’s temptation and felt heat rising up his body. He cursed himself for turning into self-destruction mode instantly...

There was no way denying that he’s frustrated! Even if it was the other side who seduced him, there was no way he could attack her while her younger sister was sleeping on the side. It was way too crude by the common-sense!

For time being, he’s starting to regret a little bit.

“Anyways, it is quite the trouble for my weapon to break when I can’t use the shops anymore.”

Weapon destruction are common in <WBG0>. It would occur randomly when hit by a bullet or explosion at close range, and to counter this issue, they could pick up a spare weapon or weapons dropped by dead enemies in the area.

But, the definition of weapons in <WBGO> was considerably wide, beside guns, bombs and knives, as long as it displays on the weapon icon, be it an iron pipe, a bottle, a brick, or even a chair, it will be considered as a weapon too. Within the game, there are even eccentric players who would obtain certain titles from using an unusual weapon or fighting with a weapon that could only be made by local materials.

For the time being, Karito already completed the titles and skills for it, the main effects resulted in the improvement of close-ranged attacks, long-ranged throwing attacks, and it also unlocked exclusive combos with the weapons made from local material.

Setting that aside, if one choose not to discard the unusable destroyed weapon and instead store it in their item box , it could still be put out for repair by connecting to the shop through the PDA. However, ever since Karito arrived to this world, the PDA could not be used, aside from changing his equipment and storing and taking out items.

It was suppose to be like that.

“Even though I have obtained unlimited money in my hand, has it become useless...?”

Karito’s grumblings stopped abruptly as he operated his PDA.

On the screen, an icon indicating some kind of update was being carried out flickered.

It was the first change since he came into this world. Karito’s body slightly stiffened and he immediately tapped on the icon.

<<A fixed BP(Battle Point) has been saved. The Shop will be unlocked. You are now able to purchase various equipment through the Shop. When more points are accumulated, support request option will be enabled.>>

BP equals to experience points in <WBGO>, it can be earned when you succeed on missions in the Mercenary Mode and by defeating enemies or reaching special objectives. In addition, by allotting BP into various parameters it can be used to reinforce the players’ abilities, and in accordance to the accumulation, you will also be able to unlock various kinds of restrictions, making possible to buy a high end equipment and strong support in the Shop.

However, that wasn't the important point for Karito...

The reason why the Shop which was unusable when he was in the mountain hut can be used now. The difference between that time and now was the amount of points he had accumulated.

"Is it because I have killed enemies over there?"

That was the only reason he could think of. Inside <WBGO>, the shop will only be useable after clearing the practice mission received after the basic operation tutorial. He could only guess based on that.

For instance, 'isn't there a clue for me to return to my original world?' this flashed through his mind?

As the points accumulate, a special privilege will unlock, and he may be able to finally return to his original world now————

Such expectations immediately disappeared after he looked at the log of how much points he had acquired with his PDA. As expected, it was at the time when he killed the Alwina soldiers that he earned those points.

He didn't notice anything about the points when he made his first kill to help Reona and Rina, because Karito has turned off the settings when he was in the mountain hut, that was why the message about the points did not notify him at all.

"Damn it, is this some kind of joke.....!"

A real killing on a real battlefield, it was made exactly like the game and with that being reflected into reality, was somewhat disturbing that it isn't laughable.

Seized by impulse to throw the PDA at the wall, Karito gritted his teeth and managed to somehow endure it and persisted to operate it.

After opening the shop, item purchases and repairs, as well as some support request became available. As the result of Karito's many years of play and having collected almost all of the items from events and limited time rare equipments at an infinite amount, there were no new benefit for Karito.

Fortunately, the equipment repair was made possible. Although a period of time will be consumed before it was possible to use it again, with the essential money in infinite amount, it was possible to repair an armor like Juggernaut MK3. With this, as long as he did not abandon the broken weapons, Karito was grateful that he wouldn't have to lose more weapons anymore.

The problem was the Support Request. The contents of the support request was divided into two kinds, one was the supplies support that summons the special equipments and weapons itself, and the other one was for support attacks where once the request is accepted, the attack will be executed out of nowhere towards the appointed target.

This type of supports that could be requested by paying money at the present was only for basic stuffs, but in this fantasy world where the level of civilization was only in the Medieval Era, even Karito vaguely understood how outstanding it could be.

Even if the other support request couldn't be used at the moment, as battle accumulates, other options would probably be available naturally..... but, Karito didn't have any intention to participate in battles for such a reason.

At least for now.

"But, I am grateful that the support request is possible now, I wonder if it can be activated properly."

As expected he couldn't possibly try it here, he might try it later when there is an opportunity.

When he heard voices and footsteps from the top of the stairs, he decided to return back to his assigned room. Because of how he left the room, it was harder to return to it now, he vowed not to be taken by Reona's pace this time.

As expected, the soldiers were all busy as he passed them, he followed the route that he already memorized back to his room, feeling ashamed. There he saw the shadow of a person dressed in a robe standing by the door that was left open. It seemed to be a visitor, but Karito couldn't identify what kind of person it was since the whole body was covered in a robe from head to toe.

Karito managed to approach behind the person covered in robe quickly. The person

didn't seem to notice even after he was already at a distance where he could touch her if he were to stretch his hand. Looking inside the room from behind, Reona seemed to be talking with Ordy, his back facing the door.

The one who noticed first wasn't Reona but Ordy.

"Aah, I am glad that you decided to return"

"Mn? Who are you———"

Karito realized that the person dressed in robes was a women not by her voice but by the sense of her touch.

Despite that the jet black robe seemed to have been cut out from darkness and was made from a fairly thick fabric, the feeling of the soft skin that had transmitted over was definitely of a women. Rather it would be more surprising if it was a man instead.

"Uoou!?"

The person in robes jumped up in surprise. Due to the jump, the hood that hid the head slipped down and her face was instantly revealed.

To be honest, she was a beauty to the extent that you can't help but stare once you had taken a glance of her.



Her eyes, the bridge of her nose, and the shape of her lips gave off the strong impression of an intellectual being.

On other hand, the atmosphere that she gave off was far from sharpness, but instead was one that gave Karito the illusion that he was standing in front of a proud millennium old large tree.

However there were two distinct features of her beauty.

One was the color of her skin. Her skin was so pale that shet looked like an ice statue that just came alive. It gave the feeling that blood was no flowing inside her.

The other one was her eyes. Her pupils were dull white. She was blind.

“Umm... who are you? I mean, do you have any business with Ordy-san?”

“Apparently this person wants to talk with you. She intended to look for you alone, but I guided her as well since I have business with my daughter.”

“Is that so. I am sorry that I left the room without permission when you came to visit———”

“Please excuse me for a while.”

“Yes? Wa, it is cold!?”

No sooner she said that, the finger of the beautiful blind woman dressed in robe, stretched from inside her robe and touched Karito. Both of her hands groped Karito’s upper part body as if she wanted to check it, part by part. Her fingers creeped upwards to his face without hesitation. Her fingertips were cold, like ice.

“Well, this is surprising. This is the first time I witness such an existence. The face is not bad at all.”

“May I ask who are you!?”

“Oh, I am sorry for my rudeness, I became engrossed since you’re such an unusual person. My name is Marian Angelheart. Even though I look like this, I am a pretty good magician.”

“What is with the ‘pretty good’. Listen Karito, this person here, is called the walking dictionary of the Belcania Allied Nations and is also the best national class magician around.”

“I am just a human who died long ago. Don’t exaggerate it like that, I am just a woman who should have died in an epidemic but still failed to die.”

“In regards to various words that I’ve missed out.”

The strongest class magician, well, looking at her magician like robe, at a glance it does gives off the impression of a high quality item, surely the magician’s robe give a powerful status buffs. The woman herself vibrated a presence that any ordinary person would not.

When he said that she was a walking dictionary, it was possible that she was older than her appearance suggested, here being the world of magic, it wouldn’t seem odd that a medicine to restore youth and perpetual immortality exists. It would be rather disappointing for Karito if reality was to set and she would look like her real age. Yet as long as she has the face of a young beautiful woman, whether she was five hundred or a thousand years old, Karito will not care.

However, when he heard her say ‘I have been dead long time ago’ and ‘I should have died suddenly but still failed to die.’ he couldn’t simply ignore this statement.

“I’m sorry, but I don’t follow your story.....”

“Ee, could you have be a spiritual being by any chance? I heard stories from my father, but this is my first time seeing the real thing.”

“O, onee-chan don’t say it like that, that is rude.”

“Rina is right. You aren’t permitted to speak like that in front of a superior human being! Moreover this is your first meeting.”

[TL: superior here is not in racist thing, but more someone who have higher status, like how you difference high elf and normal elf.]

A dull sound of fist and a dog like scream echoed. Immediately after that, Karito asked a fundamental question.

“...what is a spiritual being?”

“Spiritual beings are people who had been sent into the underworld yet to once again be revived to the living world. Even so, only a few renowned magician did this after fulfilling several conditions.”

“What are the conditions?”

“First of all, that person has to be a powerful spirit magician..... and it seemed to be limited to human magicians too. There are terms for the cause of death too where it should not be caused by a wound from battles or death from poisoning.”

“In other words, only a master magician who had died by natural death and diseases can become a spiritual being.”

“That is almost correct. The point is that the spiritual beings are essentially the same as a living human, except that the body is moved by the power of spirits instead of blood. One will not feel any pain nor heat or cold, even if a sword was to penetrate the body, blood will not flow just like a dead person. The only benefit of becoming a spiritual being is that unless the body is completely destroyed, one would obtain a pseudo immortality, but if they are already tired of living, then this benefit would only be a pain to them.”

Only someone who had experience it like Marian could calmly state it with importance and intensity.

The sorrow of longevity that surpassed any ordinary person, was a story that has been going around since the creation of the earth. Even Karito somehow had grasped the idea of what the pseudo beautiful zombie right in front of him had experienced.

“It must have been hard for you.”

“I am still having a hard time. In addition, there are some old fashioned fools who wanted to wage a huge war and pick a fight with this country. I have thought numerous time that I should have just retired to some mountain and spend my life quietly...”

“I understand that, but why are you touching me again!?”

“It can’t helped since my eyes can’t see. When I was young I was infected by a common

epidemic and after three days and three nights of fever I finally collapsed. However, you sure are a strange one ——— that reminds me I still didn't know your name. Can you tell me please?"

"Wa, Watari, I am called Watari Karito. Watari is my surname and Karito is my given name."

"It is a strange name. Where did Karito came from?"

"...In short, I came from a distant place. To be frank, maybe it can be called another world."

"Another world hm. I see, then I am convinced. That explains why even my 'eyes' are unable to see it."

While speaking out her thoughts, Marian nodded her head repeatedly, the others tilted their heads in confusion.

The other people didn't seem to have notice it, not even Karito himself, but only she was aware of the difference.

"Is there something wrong with Karito-san...?"

"That is, I can't feel any sign of spirit from this Karito boy at all. That is why my spiritual eyes can't see the figure of this boy."

"Kun Kun... it hurts. Then, what is this spirit eyes?"

The 2nd ironfist of love fell.

"Fumu. I have already said it a while ago that I turned blind because of an illness that I contracted when I was young. But, I was blessed with magic talent as compensation instead, and had the ability to see the spirits of living beings and inanimate objects."

"According to her, she sees the silhouette of person and things like grains of various colours in darkness."

Karito had heard stories that when someone loses one of the five senses, the remaining senses will become more sensitive.

There seemed to be a woman who was visually impaired. Although she can't see she was able to visualize the scenery in her brain artificially by sharpening other senses to the extreme. Marian's case was like the fantasy version of it.

"Later, I named it the 'Spirit Eyes' since it enables one to see the power of the spirit living in a person with the spirit eyes. I had thought of such a simple name but it had made things easier. With this, I am able to see objects on the other side of a wall and able to sense anyone approaching from behind to some range immediately. In addition, the scale of spirit flow I am able to see is more accurate than when you see with naked eyes. It had become more enjoyable that I was improving magic more efficiently. Before I realized it, I was chosen as a Royal magician in the royal palace. In those days, I innocently rejoiced."

"How long ago is that story?"

"N, how long was it? was it 500 years ago? No, was it 600 years ago?"

Aside from the complexion of her dead body, this beauty already 500 years old (estimation) huh. Un, this is fantasy after all.

...No, in this case isn't he the one who is a stranger in this world, an existence of fantasy instead? Karito seemed seriously troubled for a moment

"Well, if I'm able to go through to this world, have I not already fall into an acceptable range."

"What are you talking about?"

"No, I'm just mumbling."

"Let's return back to the topic, I wasn't able to notice Karito's existence until I was called out, the reason was because I couldn't feel the flow of spirit from him. As though he had came from a place where... magic doesn't exist..."

Everyone's eyes focused on Karito at once. Under the intimidating attention from all the stares, Karito felt like faltering.

"...I am very sorry to question a benefactor of my daughters in this way. But I want you

to tell me clearly now———who are you?”

He wanted to give an honest answer if he could. Even though Karito was exuding such a troubled ambience, under Ordy’s intimidating stare that can even stop the crying children, Karito wasn’t able to withstand it anymore.

“———— In other words you had strayed into this world before you notice it?”

“If you put it simply, it is like that.”

“Then I am able to comprehend it to some extent. Since you came from a world where neither spirit nor magic exists, I can understand why I can’t feel any signs of spirits in Karito boy at all.”

“When I first saw the weapon you called ‘gun’, I thought it was some kind of magic item, but indeed to be able to create such a complicated weapon like that with only steel and without magic, the technology of your world is truly amazing.”

Eventually, Karito confessed the details of how he had arrived in this world from the beginning, to the events till now to some degree.

The content of his story was is 60% lie and 40% truth. He said that he was a soldier from a country called ‘Japan’ in the world called ‘Earth’ where magic does not exist, he was fully armed since he was training for an actual battle before he noticed that he slipped into this world.

To be honest, he felt extremely uncomfortable to tell a lie, in fear of other people finding out (Especially Ordy), Karito was quite perturbed by it.

It will be quite confusing to explain about <WBGO>, especially about the VRMMOFPS stuff, in the world where even the concept of video games does not exist, it would be useless to explain it.

In this situation where the people of the alternate world to be in the middle of a real war that was about to happen, Karito had to surrender to such methods as to defend himself and not displease them by revealing himself as someone who is addicted to the entertainment of a Battlefield simulation experience

For now, it seemed like Ordy and other had readily believed on Karito’s circumstances

which had more lies than the truth. And by such response, Karito's conscience was tormented even more.

"Well. Even though you are from different world, as long as you're a soldier I would like to ask for your help but... No, I shouldn't be involving you more than this. Karito, Reona and Rina too, listen to me please."

"Yes, what is it Father?"

Ordy squat down to match his eyes with his younger daughter, and placed his hand on the shoulder of his older daughter, stating with serious face.

"You will leave this town with Karito at tomorrow's dawn. The Alwina Army should reach here on the day after tomorrow. You guys have to escape before that."

[TL:This is the author Q&A with the reader]

>By the situation, the invading army is like a cornered rat as well.
The situation is similar to the Soviet Union force in WW2

>You don't have to mind the impressions too much, just do your best!
Thanks for the heartwarming words.
But I tend to be easily swayed by the words of others.

>Don't just fight directly from the front, what about setting traps too?
For this Citadel Battle, we'll have the main character join the guerilla fight for the town.

>Could he carry a 106 mm anti tank as he wears the power suit?
Of course I wouldn't have him wait as a Bush Master after having him wear the strengthen exoskeleton armour. I'm sorry to have not meet your expectations.

CHAPTER 9

BATTLE IN CITADEL (1)

Before dawn, when there was still darkness lingering in the sky...

Despite being at that the time when the roosters have not crowed yet, the soldiers diligently guarded the citadel, keeping watch over the double layered fortress.

A strong defense team was spread out, especially along the big gates which served as the entrance point of the citadel. Along the top of the castle walls were huge crossbows that could take out not just archers and magician troops, but even dragons with in a blow — the ballista. There were quite a few units scattered along the walls.

The soldiers concentrated most of their wariness at the forest slightly further from the citadel. A highway forms a connection from the plains to the citadel from the forest, so the large forces of the Alwinan army could only march directly from this route. Certainly, the opponent will appear from the forest.

However, the time before dawn was a volatile time for putting down one's guard. Among the soldiers who were assigned to protect the fortress from an invasion, there were some who chatted idly with their friends to keep their drowsiness away while patrolling the fort.

"Yo, Patrick! When will you propose?" One guardsman ribbed.

"Hasn't she taken refuge in the imperial city? If you take it easy, she might be taken away by another guy!" Another grinned.

Teased by his seniors, the young soldier blushed red while objecting.

"It's... It's not the time to make idle talk! We do not know when the Alwinan army will attack!"

"It's good to be diligent, but you won't last if you strain yourself too much. It can't be helped since you are young." They snorted.

“Please don’t treat me like a child!” Patrick could only protest softly.

“In our eyes, you’re still a greenhorn after all. Haven’t you heard that it will take another day for the Alwinan army to arrive at the Citadel?”

“But there is a possibility that they could’ve sent scouts here first to check on the situation.” Patrick stated firmly.

“That’s true. Even so, it would probably be only one platoon (4 soldiers) of light cavalry or sky cavalry at the most. Ignoring the sky cavalry, there is no way a light cavalry platoon riding horses and wielding swords will come out of the forest where arrows and magic can easily reach.” One of the older soldiers explained.

The attack range of bows depends on its type, but it is roughly around 300 meters. Magic has roughly the same range, except for some large-scale attack magic.

Even at the point where the distance between the fortress and the forest is at its nearest, it is certainly out of range since there is more than 1 km between the two.

“But, Patrick. To be honest, I want you to make that girl happy. It’s because it is you that I can entrust her to you without worries.” The senior soldier sighed wistfully.

“Yeah, that’s right. That girl is obviously interested in you. But, you two aren’t official yet, and I actually bet on your relationship. Thanks to that, I am broke this month.” Another soldier complained.

“I told you that 3 weeks was too short. In the first place, aren’t you the stupid one to bet a few months’ worth of salary?” One of the guards piped up.

“Please don’t bet on people’s love life!” Patrick yelled.

The scream of the young man could be heard everywhere, resulting in the suppressed laughs of men standing on guard as it echoed throughout the fort. At the same time, dawn arrived, and the morning sun appeared, resulting in a ray of light brightening the sky from the horizon.

However, the laughter of the soldiers was drowned out by the warning from the watch posts installed everywhere.

“Report! Enemy soldiers have been spotted in the forest!”

“This is it!”

The atmosphere suddenly changed. The air felt prickly, tinged with danger.

Numerous soldiers turned their eyes and their bloodlust towards the forest, and the younger soldiers followed suit. Along with the sunrise that flooded the land with light, shadows wriggled unnaturally at the boundary lines of the forest and the plain. Just like what had been discussed before, it was a light cavalry troop riding their horses. But, it would be great if it was only that.

That wasn't the reason why all the soldiers of the Citadel's defense force protecting the fort were shocked.

The problem was...

“What is with those numbers...?”

“It's not a scouting team! The scale is too big! Could they have sent their main army directly!?”

“It's too early! Didn't they say that it will take at least another day for the main army to attack!?”

One after another, the Alwinan soldiers revealed themselves from inside the forest. The scale was not something that the soldiers could count with all their fingers and toes. The national flag of the Kingdom of Alwina displaying a cane and a sword intersecting behind a crown fluttered in wind, suggesting that it was not a friendly unit.

The soldiers moved to their battle stations even as they fell into panic. A few soldiers were readying their bows while the others stayed behind their comrades to prepare for the second wave. Another unit was gathering stones and bricks to throw down the castle gate, and some of the demi-human soldiers who were proud of their strength took hold of the ballista, which needed a lot of physical strength.

The soldiers protecting the inner fortress received the report of the sudden emergence of the Alwinan troops and hurriedly moved. The young man named Patrick

charging there filled the youth, who was looking down from the top of the distant castle, with primal fear.

“Do not shoot yet!” Without the voice of senior soldiers shouting from the side, they would’ve hastened and wasted the arrows.

“Don’t be distracted by the enemies on the ground! Don’t let the sky cavalry to approach too!” The commander warned them.

In this world, it is a standard tactic to siege a castle by bombing it from the sky with a support charge from the ground units at the same time.

The accuracy rate of the arrows for aerial attacks are poor. Moreover, if the opponent is a dragon, except if they can hit it’s eyes or mouth, arrows would be completely useless. The dragons can be shot down with the power of the ballista too, but the most effective counterattack would still be a magician’s aerial attack.

As expected, the Alwinan sky cavalry passed over the charging cavalry troops and flew in a straight line. This time in his panicked state, Patrick was about to shoot with his bow.

At that very moment, shadows flew from above Patrick’s head. When he looked up, it was the sky cavalry of the Defense Force that went to occupy the enemy sky cavalry. It crashed head to head with the Alwinan army in the plain sky. The enemy’s aerial reinforcement was suppressed. Dragon breath and the riders’ magic clashed mightily.

“Aim well!”

Flinching, Patrick hurriedly returned his attention to the ground. He corrected his arrow’s aim back at the cavalry, and desperately clamped his shaking fingertips. All the while, his heart was beating hard, and his breath was becoming short.

Dodom *Dodom* *Dodom*

Like the rumbling of the earth, the sound of an unbelievable number of horses galloping shook the ground, giving the illusion that the fort itself was shaking.

And that moment came.

“Release!!!!!!”

The chorus of the wind whipping similar to the flapping sound of a gigantic bird resounded. A large amount of arrows covered the dawn sky.

It marked the beginning of the battle of the Citadel.



“It seems like they have started.” Karito remarked.

“...”

Karito looked at Reona, who was pouting sullenly, and felt like sighing. Rina, who was sitting beside Reona, gazed back and forth between her displeased older sister and the direction of the intense battle, tense due to the cacophony of sounds from the attempted invasion.

Their current position was on the opposite side of where the Citadel defense army and the Alwina army clashed. They were on a small carriage heading towards the gate leading to the highway that connected to the Imperial city.

There was a large number of passengers on the carriage as well besides the three of them. In reality, Karito and the group had requested for the unreasonable, and had to ride a carriage without a hood packed with household goods to the brim.

“U~~~~~ Grrr~~~~~” An agitated wolf-like groan escaped from Reona’s throat.

Her irritated figure and repetitious groans were scaring the other passengers on board. Or maybe they were frightened by the fighting noises that had started to echo on other side?

“You know, Reona. Ordy-san wanted you and Rina to stay in a safe place. That is why he ordered us to escape like this.” Karito stated gently.

“I know! I know that already! Even so, it is still so frustrating! I am always running away from those Alwinan bastards without hitting them even once!” She ground her teeth together, clenching her fists tightly.

Surprised by Reona's expression as she ground her teeth and barked her frustrations, a girl who looked about the same age as Reona, and the adult version of the girl jumped, startled. Their brown cat ears and tails stood upright, showing their frightened state.

The mother-daughter pair was from the family who ran Ordy's favorite pub. The father, husband, and the shopkeeper of the bar was the one holding the reins of the carriage horse. The husband is an ordinary human, and his daughter is half human and half feline beastman.

"O-Onee-chan, calm down!" Rina panicked.

"Uu... Haa, so pathetic. I am so pathetic..." Reona hung her head in self-loathing as her triangular dog ears slanted downwards, showing her depression.

"But, looks like we've only marched for a short distance, and yet the battle has already begun." Karito mumbled as he struggled amidst the luggage and moved towards the coachman's stand.

He narrowed his eyes towards the direction of their travel route. There were only two gates that led outside of the Citadel, which was surrounded by two layers of walls. As there was only 1 gate that led to the Imperial City, the residents who have failed to take refuge earlier were flooding the one and only exit gate.

Not only were the people trying to take refuge carrying huge bags as they rushed towards the only escape route, when they noticed the Alwinan forces attacking, they flew into panic, and the flow of people became even worse.

When he tried to zoom into the direction of the gate with his goggles, he saw a lot of refugees pushing and shoving towards the gate.

There was around 300 meters between Karito's position and the inner gate. As things seemed to be on the verge of breaking into a riot, considering the distance, it would be difficult for the carriage to pass as it is. In this situation, even the roar of Defense Force soldiers who were guiding the refugees won't reach their ears.

Karito, who judged so, tried to advise the man.

"Umm, wouldn't it be better to throw away the carriage and move on foot on this

occasion?”

“But to throw away the baggage... I don’t know if I can come back to this city anymore. All of this is our entire wealth.” The man protested.

“I understand that, but—”

—————BOOOOOOM!!!

At the moment when Karito tried to continue, the sound of an explosion assaulted them. Both of them curled up in defense, pressing their palms to their ears. The explosion repeated another 2 or 3 times before stopping.

The sound of the explosion was too loud to be from the battle between the Defense Force and the Alwinan army on the other side of town across the Citadel headquarters which located in the center. The direction of the explosion he heard was... He turned towards the gate that led to the Imperial city.

The gate which had been overflowing with refugees till a while ago was covered in billowing smoke. It was not only smoke, there were also orange flames licking hungrily at the area around the gate. The death cries and screams for help from the refugees resounded clearly, reaching Karito and the group. Karito couldn’t help but want to cover his ears.

Then in the next moment, a large shadow pierced through the smoke with a high pitched shrill. What had appeared was a griffon.

Following after was a beast which had wings on it’s back. The hippogriff pecked through the refugees’ heads while the riders stuck out their hands and fired magic cannons and fireballs at the refugees below them. Those who couldn’t use spirit magic were throwing bombs one after another. The bodies of the refugees which were directly hit scattered everywhere.

To top it off, dragons appeared at a delayed timing. Several dragons spewed flame breaths at the defense forces that stood on upper part of the fort. The soldiers who were swallowed by the flames couldn’t even utter a cry from the heat and died instantly.

As the Defense Force focused their fighting power along the gate which bordered the

side where the Alwinan forces were expected to invade, only a small number of soldiers were stationed at the gate leading towards the Imperial City.

Even the deployed magicians were caught up in the dragons' breaths without being able to respond to sky cavalry's surprise attack. The extent of the counterattack that the few soldiers from the Defense Force could manage was only shooting arrows at the enemy's foot soldiers. Because they panicked, they were not able to aim accurately, and the arrows which luckily hit were being repelled by the dragons' hard scales, barely even leaving a scratch. Before long, the soldiers who were defending the gate were being wiped out.

In an instant, the area around the gate was engulfed in a sea of flames, and the only escape route from this city had been blocked by the flames.

No matter where you look, there was not a single ally there. It was also clear who the attackers were when one looked at the crests on the uniforms of the sky cavalry.

"I-It's is the Alwinan Army!!!!!!!"

With that scream as a trigger, this time, the refugees fell into a true state of panic. The surging crowd started to reverse all at once.

The refugees desperately returned to the road from where they came from, throwing away the luggage that they had once held so importantly. Those whose footings were stumbled by the abandoned luggages ended up being trampled by the other refugees without anyone trying to help them, and died. Such a scene was spreading everywhere.

It was not only humans that panicked. The carriage horses, being affected by the confusion, began running away wildly in response. Bounced off bodies bigger than themselves, the refugees' bodies were crushed under the horses' merciless hooves.

Meanwhile, Karito, who was still riding on the horse drawn carriage, was noticed, and the enemy directed their aim towards Karito's group. They glided straight towards them.

"Not good! We must get off the carriage and run away from here right now!" Karito ordered.

“U-Understood!” The passengers yelled and scrambled to follow his command.

But, what could they achieve after getting off the carriage? If they just ran around like the other refugees, they would surely be killed by the sky cavalry. In fact, they were already being targeted by the sky cavalry, and Karito, who had experienced the power of the dragon breath, instinctively knew what they were dealing with.

(Should I counterattack? No, I can't do that. With this path, it would involve the refugees, and I won't make it in time!)

At least, if they could just escape into a sturdy building or...

“Jump into the brick building over there! Reona and the others too, hurry!” Karito yelled frantically.

“Alright! Rina, be sure to hold on tight!” Reona instructed as she grasped her sister tightly.

“Y-Yes!” Rina gulped audibly.

As soon as he said so, Karito leapt off the carriage with 2 to 3 steps. As a result, they managed to jump over the refugees, and succeeded in landing on the entrance of the brick building a few meters away.

Following after him was Reona with Rina clutching onto her. They climbed up a pile household goods and jumped from the top. Reona reached Karito's side easily while holding onto a child.

The third to follow was the mother-daughter pair of cat beastmen. Like Reona, they jumped over inhumanly without any problems.

(I see... Their feline factor resulted in their agility.)

The last one to arrive was the storekeeper, who somehow managed across the torrents of refugees. By that time, the dragon had approached so close to Karito's position that they were almost within the range of the dragon breath.

There was not much time anymore. Karito looked up as the dragon opened its big mouth. The door to the building was locked, but was forced open by Karito and Reona's powerful front kicks.

“Go inside! It’s commmiiingggg!!!” Karito pushed everyone inside the building while screaming.

And finally, the dragon spat out its intense flames.

“Gah! Gu...! Geho!!?” An intense heat wave at Karito’s back, and he was blown off roughly, somehow landing on his face.

The exposed part of his nape stung, and the hair on the back of his felt burnt. As soon as he tried to breathe, hot air burned in his throat. The heat felt like someone had shoved them into a burning furnace. Sweat broke out as their whole bodies were exposed to the heat wave.

When he looked towards the door while raising his body, he only saw hell outside of the door. To be more specific, it was comparable to a purgatory scene where they purify souls with crimson flames.

In any case, there were no other survivors who had taken this flame directly, and still lived in Karito’s view.

After being engulfed by the flames, although the building itself could endure the damage, the inside was overwhelmed by the heat wave and smoke. They should leave this place as soon as possible.

“...There is a back door there. Let’s leave here and move through the alleyways.” Karito stated.

“But where are we going to run away to?” The shopkeeper asked, trembling hard.

“To the headquarters. At least we will be able to take shelter there, and we know that there are allies to protect us.” Karito replied with a clear answer after contemplating for a while.

CHAPTER 10

BATTLE IN CITADEL (2)

When the headquarters received the news that the gate on the side leading towards the Imperial City was bombed by a surprise attack of the Alwina Sky Cavalry, they were brought into great confusion. Next, it was reported that a detached force which consisted of cavalry soldiers and infantries had successively invaded the city. The headquarters that had just recovered itself immediately gave the decision to send a military unit reserved as defensive forces.

Since the defense was breached in an unexpected direction, there was no other way to intercept the detached force except to wage a battle within the city walls.

The fighting power of the detached force was estimated to be around 5,000. On the other hand, the defense force had only managed to squeeze out around 600 people. The difference in strength was almost 10 times.

However, the organized unit consisted not only of humans. It was a mixed unit that contained not only human soldiers, but also demi humans possessing physical strength and agility far exceeding ordinary man-like beasts and centaurs led by the Garm tribe.

The extents of their equipments could be seen from each race, the human knights wore their usual armors, but the tribes that were generally known for fast movements, such as the Garm tribe, emphasized on lightness and only wore minimum armors of breastplates, shoulder plates, and hand guards. In contrast, the Centaurs who literally excelled in horsepower, and the dwarves who had physiques of an ordinary child excelled in their physical strength, had their whole body wrapped with durable armors heavier than human beings.

Their appearance spread intimidation into the air, any weak willed person would have escaped the scene in the first notice.

The one commanding the troops was Ordy, the legendary Fenrir having silver hair more beautiful than any silverwork, a person whose only born once every several hundred years in the Garm Tribe.

With Ordy as the leader of the two legged and four legged demi humans, humans, and dwarves, each with their own items and equipments, rode on horses and transportation carriages in order cross the drawbridge over deep moat that separated the headquarters and the city area.

“Raise the bridge after all of us have crossed over! You must never lower the bridge until we return!”

“Understood!”

After looking back and giving orders to the soldiers operating the bridge, Ordy turned around to the direction of the gate on the Imperial Capital’s side. black smoke rose up on other side of the buildings.

His more developed canine teeth dug into his lips, having pierced through his lips easily, Ordy did not concern himself with the pain and the taste of iron that spread through his mouth.

His daughters and the benefactor young man should be around that area in order evacuate. It would have been much safer for them to stay in the barracks now, but there was no use regretting it anymore.

Perhaps... the girls’ group was already in the hands of the Alwina army under those smokes —————.

“(Don’t think about unnecessary things, all I need to think now is how to suppress the Alwina army and keep my subordinates alive.)”

Ordy and his subordinates’ speed from the Garm tribe was much faster than horses. They had ran taking the lead while the other demi human tribesmen and ordinary soldiers followed after by horse. Among those riding on the horses were few magicians.

“Lay a barricade here! Anything will do, pile them up and make a wall!”

While being alert to the enemies that might appear from the opposite side or on the sky, the soldiers gathered abandoned luggages, and pulled out furniture that could be used from inside the buildings, debris both sides of the road and piled it up.

Some archers and magicians climbed on the building roofs to secure their shooting range, and stood on guard from a better viewing position.

“Engineers set up the explosives!”

With their short body, the dwarves, surrounded by the escort soldiers jumped over the barricades easily, and set up the explosives they brought skillfully in every other houses.

The Dwarves were a race who lived in steep mountainous area, they excelled in mining techniques and can be said that handling explosives are their forte. There were even an anecdote that says that they had managed to master the use of gunpowders much faster than the humans who produced it.

The gunpowder in this world had a form of thick liquid with high viscosity. It was made by mixing several kind of secret medicines together with oil and casted with a magician's' spirit power into it. It is said that the number of magicians is relatively proportioned to the volume of the gunpowder being produced, and that Alwina Kingdom was the first to invent the explosives.

It would explode in response to fire or spirit magic, one would only need to shoot fire arrows or fire magic to detonate them. In order to make the detonation much easier, they even left leather bags filled with flammable materials with oil surrounding the explosives.

The detached force will surely advance through this main street, Ordy was convinced ——— because there was no other route where a large army can march to the headquarters gate besides this main street.

As the result of building dwellings adequate only to shelter from rainfall, and with the increasing citizens and lack of proper city planning, Citadel City became distorted like a go board. For that reason, Ordy's group only set up barricades on the wide main street, unless one are residents familiar with the city layout, once you step inside the alleys, it will turn into a labyrinth with no way to escape.

Of course there were also a route from the narrow alleys that connects to an exit near the headquarters, but it will be impossible for the Alwina army who isn't familiar with the city.

“Enemy Troops Discovered!”

“Alright, all members go to your position!”

Following the report from the archers on the roof, they held onto the barricade. With their sharp hearings, the Garm tribe could hear the slightly scattered marching footsteps. The same happened to those soldiers from other races, their human and beastman ears were twitching.

From the other side of the main street that curved slightly, the detached force of the Alwina army appeared. Their formation spread out as it filled the main street, making them look like a flood of people ——— their desperation reflected by the way they enter the scene was similar to those on the defending side.

Over the heads of the detachment force were the troops riding on their Gryphon. It was clearly not allied forces. They approached the barricade rapidly. Ordy’s sight accurately grasped the rider who was preparing to throw a bomb.

“Get me a Javelin”

“Yes!”

A subordinate offered a spear to Ordy.

The spear was a throwing spear, being shorter and more balanced than the conventional spear. After checking its grip, Ordy concentrated his consciousness, placing all his strength under his navel as a thin layer of light covered his whole body. A strength reinforcement magic was invoked.

The reinforcement was to the degree that the short spear was almost crushed in his grasp.

“UOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!”

With a scream and a short run, the Javelin was thrown. With the ideal motion and strength reinforcement magic added on top of the superior strength of demi humans, the short javelin tore through the air aiming for the Gryphon flying at low altitude.

There was not enough time to evade.

Rather than describing it as a sound of a javelin piercing its target, it was the sound of a steel hammer pulverizing bones and flesh that reverberated in the air as the javelin penetrated through the Gryphon and its rider from an angle. A large hole was drilled open as fresh blood and pieces of flesh flew from their back as if they had exploded from inside their own bodies.

Both of them were skewered by the short spear and crashed to the buildings without ever reaching the barricade. The feets of detachment force who witnessed their allied Sky Cavalry being shot down stopped.

Standing on either side of the barricade, Ordy's Defence Force glared at the Alwina Forces like master swordsmen in a duel. At that moment, the noises of a larger war on the other side of town seemed like an event in a faraway world.

The formation of Alwina army began with the heavy infantry of shields and long spears in front as they gradually advance towards the barricade. While closing the distance, they could feel the tension rising.

———— A huge explosion resounded from the direction of the main battlefield.

As if that was the cue, the detached force simultaneously sped up and began their charge. With a roar, the detached vanguards closed their gap to the barricade, the heavy infantry advanced holding a large shield on their left hands and a long spear on their right.

As soon as they reached the range of arrows and magic, Alwina archers situated in the rear of the formation stopped their advance and started to give a cover fire for the infantry soldiers as they continue their charge. The barrage of arrows and magic flew over the heads of their allies to rain over the barricade

The defender side followed up by erecting a semi-transparent barrier, built from spirit magic by the magician unit which was protected by the big shields from their allies. It was said that a high-ranking magician is able to erect a defensive barrier around a big building that will not shake even slightly when it receives damages from massive magic attacks and siege weapons.

As soon as the arrows touched the semicircular film, it was easily repelled, light and

flame balls exploded on the surface of the curtain. The magicians that erected the defensive wall grimaced upon the impact, however the improvised barricade was safe. The heavy infantry was still advancing.

This time it was the turn of Ordy's group.

"Those situated on the roofs will shoot the most outward buildings according to your own judgments!"

With that instruction, the archers and magicians on the roof aimed fire arrows and magic canons towards the buildings at the distance set with explosives, then they fired.

In a heartbeat, a large explosion occurred after several fire arrows and magic were released towards the edge of the buildings. It was at the very moment when the foremost infantries charging ahead arrived in front of the building. The pieces of building materials from the explosion blast became a weapon, hitting blows to the detachment force at the best moment of time.

As the smoke cleared up, the scenery of countless corpses could be seen. There were those whose body was torn into shreds, those and those whose all four limbs were torn from the bomb's blast. Even when the wounds couldn't be seen, there are those who still died from the damages received by their internal organs from the blast's shockwave, those who bled from every body openings, and there were also those burned from the high-temperature blast, and died from breathing difficulties and etc. Various corpses lay scattered throughout the main street.

The footsteps of those who escaped from the explosion weakened. After being scolded by their commanders, they had attempted to step over the corpses of their allies but Ordy's group didn't miss the chance.

"Firee!!!"

At the same time as the signal, arrows and magic were released all at once, pouring over the heads of the Detachment Force.

In this way, a curtain of a new fierce battle was dropped.

Meanwhile at that time, Karito's group.

“Which way should we turn next?”

“We should definitely turn right here.”

“You’ve said that earlier too, but still we ended up hitting a dead end. Is this really the right way?”

“Onee-chan! You shouldn’t say such things when they take all trouble to guide us!”

“Umm, I’m sorry. I don’t have much confidence anymore since it has changed so much since I was a child...”

We were lost. Having to depend on the daughter of the former tavern manager who turned out to be an unreliable local guide, anxiety gradually crept into our minds, doubting whether we are really heading towards the headquarters or not. Perhaps, could we be moving in the opposite direction instead?

“It will be much easier if I can use the reconnaissance aircraft (<SwitchBlade>)”

As he complained, Karito looked up at the sky from the narrow alley, and coincidentally saw an Alwina force consisting of four Sky Cavalry in a formation flying past them. Looking by the situation, it seemed like the advantage of aerial territory has been taken by the Alwina army, if he had launched the <SwitchBlade> in this situation and be discovered, in the worst case, it will be shot down on the spot and Karito’s group location would be in great risk of being found, so he gave up on the idea.

Looking at the state of the main street which looked a scene from hell, everyone escaped to the back alley. After only 15 minutes, Karito had already began to regret his choice. It was because the back alleys of this other world was in a state of chaos, whereas there are no board signs to kindly guide them through this residential area.

All the roads have different widths and various length, abandoned baggages on the streets also made it difficult to pass through, it became necessary to scan the surrounding area frequently using the sharp hearing and smelling sense of Reona and the Tavern mother and daughter pair. Who could’ve known how many times they would bump into Alwina soldiers that was scattered around the whole area.

Apparently, both sides were lost inside the back alleys that seemed like a maze to

them, but that was another matter.

“Stop. there is an enemy around that corner.”

Karito who was leading at the front who seemed to forget to scan the enemy for Nth time, discovered an enemy. He sent a signal to Reona who followed behind him by holding up his fist.

Four reactions were detected over a wall. They were approaching here. Unfortunately, there was no place for Karito’s group to hide or escape in this straight road.

If they were to be discovered, should he eliminate them before they could call for reinforcements?

It was obvious which one to choose.

‘Fuu’ he exhaled the tension that had accumulated, and checked the bullets that had been loaded into the gun in his hand.

Right now, Karito was equipped with TDI Kriss Super V submachine gun with the silencer and dot sight installed. Because of its compact size, firepower, and with a silencer attached, it was the best gun compatible for covert action or battles in narrow places. It was loaded with the .45 ACP armour piercing bullets.



When Karito mentioned that it was compatible with a silencer, he meant that when a bullet flies out at the speed of sound it will create shock waves that would echo in the surrounding area, but with Kriss Super V’s good compatibility added with the .45 acp bullet which are subsonic bullets, it will demonstrate a much more effective silencing effect.

[TL: Subsonic ammunition is ammunition designed to operate at speeds less than the speed

of sound, which at standard conditions is 343.2 m/s (1,126 ft/s). This avoids the supersonic shockwave or "crack" of a supersonic bullet, which particularly for suppressed or silenced firearms influences the loudness of the shot.]

It's striking power was higher to compensate the bullets' speed with the weight on it's projectile, but it's penetration power was still lower than the .9 mm parabellum bullet. Loaded with armor piercing bullet, it will be able to contend the standard breastplate that the soldiers of this world wore to some degree.

"1, 2 ——— 3!"

He sprang out according to the count. Giving the enemies no time to even gasp at the sudden appearance. He jumped out and scattered bullets everywhere aiming the gun roughly at the height of a human's body. The rapid fire was at 1,100 shots per minute. There was no escape in this narrow alley.

The breastplate worn by the men was a thin type that emphasized on mobility, and so the armor was easily pierced, the handgun bullets pierced through leaving a number of holes in their armor destroying their body.

There was no signs of other soldiers coming as reinforcements. He had shot them before they could let out a single groan, in the first place, people in this world who have no experience of hearing gunshots through a silencer or the like will have no way to know the identity of the sound.

While Karito reloaded the Kriss Super V which was out of ammunitions due to its high rapid-fire cycle, Karito shuffled closer to check whether the soldiers that had fallen in the pool of blood was dead or not.

————— There was only 1 person who survived. He was only a young boy who looked like a highschool student about the same age as Karito or even less.

"....."

Judging from the injury, the part where the shot had pierced through was his lungs. A large amount of fresh blood flow backwards into his mouth, he would die from drowning by his blood first than from excessive bleeding.

He look at Karito, the criminal that murdered his company and himself with eyes of

hopelessness. His mouth trembled with fresh blood clogging up his throat unenabling him to breathe, and on the verge of dying, his eyes looked at Karito strongly relaying its unsaid emotions.

...I don't want to die, his eyes pleaded.

“(Don't look at me with such eyes.)”

Karito couldn't remember how many lives he had taken within these past few days, but this was the first time he had looked at the face of a dying person.

He averted his eyes unable to endure it. He pointed the muzzle to the face of the dying boy soldier and he shot once more. He advanced forward while trying not to look at the boy's corpse that had been relieved from his pain as much as possible.

The parent and daughter that ran a tavern appeared from the corner, they wore a grim expression as they stared unbelievably at Karito. It's like they were looking at a monster. Even though the soldiers were taken by surprise, Karito had shot down four armed soldiers without touching them. In their eyes, Karito must have looked like an unidentifiable existence.

Karito decided not to think of anything unnecessary now. So pretending to feign ignorance, Karito calmly asked the cat eared girl.

“Then, where should we go next?”

“Th, this way I think.”

They resumed their move as guided by the cat eared girl. They turned right and left, as well as going straight, sometimes they would encounter Alwina soldiers, hit a dead end twice, and made a U turn once and then continued walking.

After a considerable amount of time had passed, Reona's nose suddenly twitched. Suddenly, she frowned as if bothered by something and Karito turned to peek into her face.

“Is there a strange smell? I don't smell anything in particular though.”

“Ah, un, Perhaps Karito will notice as we draw near to its source. But be careful,

because there seems to be a few people inside.”

Reona pointed out at a half opened back door of a building. Concerned with Reona’s reaction, he decided to examine it carefully.

But the moment he slipped into the gap of the door to raid inside, Karito frowned immediately too. the smell of body fluids similar to chestnut flowers reached his nose.

Partly out of obligation, he headed towards the interior of the building. He could roughly guess what was happening inside, but he wasn’t able to bring himself to ignore things when he had already noticed it.

“Oi oi, until when are you gonna shake your hips? Both of them had kicked the bucket a long time ago haven’t they ?”

Just by hearing the man’s voice , you could easily imagine him having a vulgar look.

“No, even though it is like this, it is good enough. It’s still warm and soft, it is not bad... Ku!”

They were a group of four people. They certainly are not young, and seemed to be in their 30’s or 40’s, they looked like carnivorous beasts that was hungry for blood that turned into human beings as it is.

Surrounded by them were a pair of woman and a girl. Judging from the color of their hair and face, they seemed to be parent and child. They were fairly pretty to the point that people wouldn’t had left them alone.

But the beautiful mother and child was dirtied by cloudy body fluids all over their body, and there was not even a sign of life reflected in their pupils anymore. Nevertheless the Alwina soldier who loomed on top of the mother’s naked body continued to shake his hips, the scene was too ugly to behold.

Karito’s action the moment he saw that sight was very simple.

He fired all the bullets towards those all those soldiers who still haven’t notice Karito’s presence.

Being bombarded by the bullets, the Alwina soldiers jerked their bodies in a dance of

death, while leaking out strange screams like 'Gya' 'Ga' 'Ghu'. the head of the soldier who was hammering his waist into the mother's corpse was blown away. The fishy smell was replaced by the smell of blood and gunpowder.

After a few seconds, the only human moving in that room was Karito alone.

He kicked aside the corpse of the soldier who had fall over the mother and walked towards the corpses of the mother and daughter. He doesn't have a hobby of kicking around dead bodies, but this didn't apply to the soldier.

After placing his fingers on the necks of the naked mother and daughter pair to check their pulses, clicking his tongue, he took out the pencil type syringes and injected the medicine into their necks. the contents was the same as the one he used to help Rina who was pierced by a sword, it was the resurrection medicine.

He waited for a while

He waited, waited and waited... But there was no reaction.

"Damn it!"

He threw the empty syringes to the wall and punched his fist against the wall as an impulse. His fist pierced deeply into the wall build from a mortar like material.

He understood it, he had already knew it. Unlike Rina, it was already too late for this two people when there was no clock like icons which indicated the time for possible resurrection.

Still, he thought there might still be a possibility, but it was still of no use as expected. Whose fault was this? Why can't they be helped? Is there any way to help them? His thoughts were moving in circles.

He gently closed the eyelids of the mother and daughter which was opened wide in despair and covered the two dead bodies with a blanket that lay on a corner of the room. Thinking to the best of his ability, it was the only thing Karito could do for them.

"He, help... Anyone, help me..."

What? There is someone still alive?

It looked like he had received the bullets on his chest and the right shoulder, but the bullet remained dug into the armor and didn't manage to penetrate his breastplate, it seemed like his breastplate was much thicker than the others. But, the breastplate was cracked like a cobweb spread out from the point of contact, the man's voice was faint, and it seemed like he has breathing difficulty because of the impact.

Fresh blood flowed out from a hole the size of thumb from his right shoulder that was not protected by the armor.

It was the voice of enemy soldier seeking for help.

Karito answered,

"I do not want to."

Only against this kind of opponent could kill without feeling any pangs of conscience.

While embracing such crazy thoughts, he fired all the bullets left in his magazine towards the soldier.

CHAPTER 11

BATTLE IN CITADEL (3)

After they had wandered around in circles along the back alleys, Karito and the group of refugees returned back to the main street.

Fortunately they didn't return to the spot where the dragon's air raid took place. Moreover, the distance to the headquarters from here was only a stone's throw away.

When they arrived, there were no figures of refugees present on the main street. Battle sounds echoing everywhere in the downtown reached Karito's group.

"Fi, finally we are able to get out..."

"Are you tired out already? You are pathetic."

"Rather than physically, I am more so tired mentally. How long do you think have we wandered around the alleys?"

"I'm sorry, it's all because I wasn't able to remember the way properly..."

"Ah, no, I am not blaming you! Anyway, let's go to the drawbridge, I don't know if they will drop the bridge down though..."

While heading towards the headquarters, they stuck within the shadows of the surrounding buildings in caution of the Sky Cavalry. Then Reona showed a reaction, following her, the cat eared mother and daughter pair's ears twitched and they looked towards the direction of the castle.

"Something is approaching. This... is the sound of a horse drawn carriage."

"Have the Alwina army invaded this far already?"

He pointed the muzzle on that direction, but it was of unnecessary worry. Just like Reona said, what appeared on the other side was a covered wagon drawn by two horses. The riders who were holding onto the reins were dwarves with blood-stained

bandages wrapped around their hairy head.

Karito's group watched as they drove the carriage to the base of the drawbridge and they raised an unbelievably loud voice towards the soldiers across the moat.

"I'm bringing an injured person! Drop down the bridge and treat them please!"

The suspended bridge was dropped down immediately. The Defence soldiers defending the bridge instantly crossed over from the headquarters side to help the injured fellows coming down from the carriage. Everyone had considerably deep wounds and their bandages were mostly dyed red with blood.

Looking that it was the opportunity to cross the bridge, they dashed out to approach the carriage. Then, they discovered a familiar face.

It was Ordy's subordinate who took care of Karito and the group back in the barracks. He had bandages on his thighs and stomach. It seemed that he was still conscious, he immediately noticed the appearance of his superior's daughters.

"You guys! Didn't you already take refuge!?"

"We are in the middle of evacuating when we are attacked by the Alwina army and was almost roasted alive! Leaving that aside, has father's unit also been deployed!?"

"That is right. We have been dispatched in order to intercept a detached force of the Alwina army which invaded from the gate of the Imperial city's side, but it doesn't seem that we could hold on any longer..."

Before Ordy's subordinate was able to finish his talk, Reona ran off ——— towards the battlefield.

Karito and others didn't even had the chance to stop her. In a blink of an eye, her back had already become small. You Idiot! Karito wanted to curse, but those words would no longer reach the said person anymore.

Now that things were like this, it might as well be hanged for a sheep than as a lamb. Karito instantly decided.

"Rina, you'll evacuate to the headquarters with these people, alright?"

“Wh, what about you Karito-san? Do you intend to run after onee-chan?”

“There is no way I could let her run amok! Excuse me, I’m leaving this child in your hands!”

“Karito-san!”

Ignoring Rina’s cries, Karito chased after Reona, and retraced his steps to the main street

After a few minutes of full sprint, he saw a barricade that seemed to be a defensive line that Ordy and his troops built.

Hundreds of human soldiers and soldiers of various races had weapons in their hands, supporting the barricade from being breached. They slashed and killed, knocking off the Alwina soldiers that were trying to climb over the bridge, they were being pierced with arrows and pushing back repeatedly, and each time, the number of injured people were steadily increasing. The sounds of object clashing with each other rang like a big chorus.

“Why did you come to this place!”

“Because I can not endure it! Everyone in the village was massacred, I refused to be the only one to run away when father is fighting!!”

Among the sound of sword fightings, the voice of those two quarrelling reached Karito ears. As Reona and Ordy with his silver hair stained dark red continued to deal with the Alwina army offenses, the parent and child continued to display their quarrel.

Their fists landed on the faces of the Alwina soldiers trying to climb over the barricade, resulting in the soldiers to be blown several meters backwards like a wire action. The next moment, they had grabbed the Alwina soldiers’ scruffs and thrown them back to the other side of barricade.

Reona undauntedly dodged a spear thrust by an Alwina soldier climbing over from the other side, and brandishing her glowing stanced fist, she sent an uppercut without hesitation. Karito became a witness to the moment when a human being rotated vertically for a first time.

He was wondering where such power was being hidden inside that woman's thin arms. Is this the effect of spirit magic or something of the like? As expected of fantasy.

Anyway, both parent and child duo were fighting in such a powerful manner. Both of them seemed to be a grappling type of martial artists.

Similar scenes surrounded the two. The Centaurs swung their huge axes, cutting the Alwina soldiers in two, on the opposite direction, beastmen with cat ears and tails were slicing the enemies with the knives on both of their hands, and the dwarves released a full swing of their spiked hammer at the Alwina soldiers, transforming them into mince meat together with their armors.

Even the ordinary human soldiers confronted their opponents bravely with long swords and spears. Even those soldiers who had served long military service, were exerting their fighting ability to the fullest. However, the opponents were still able to overwhelm the defence force with a military unit more than ten times their size.

Unfortunately, they have already exhausted their bomb traps, both the magicians who were out of the stamina and the injured had already been withdrawn. (Magicians who were able to fire powerful far-range attacks were given preferential treatments.)

"Karito, You! Why did you bring my daughter here!"

"I'm not the one to bring her here!? Rina had already evacuated to the headquarters together with your subordinates!"

"You too should retreat soon to the headquarters with my daughter! We couldn't hold this place anymore!"

"Then, Ordy-san should come too!"

"I can't do that, I need to hold against the Alwina army until my subordinates and volunteer troops were retreated safely. I'll become the anchorman here, that is why I want you to retreat with everyone else! I beg of you!"

For a man like Ordy who possessed both the air of chivalry and intimidation, to be pleading while desperately repelling the enemy troops' offenses, surely many would fall and gave their all to comply.

But, Karito was different.

He didn't follow Ordy's request, and on contrary asked back this question.

"... so all you need is time right ?"

With determination in his eyes, Karito took out the PDA from his pocket and operated it. Unable to understand the meaning behind his action, Ordy sent an agitated look as if saying 'what are you doing?' and he picked up a blood stained spear and thrust it into an Alwina soldier's throat.

Karito's finger moved restlessly swapping through the contents inside the equipment list and item box. When he selected the icon, the item immediately turned into reality. One after another, he equipped the item he was eyeing from his equipment list.

As if it was a magic trick, the next moment, several hand grenades were held in Karito's hands.

The official name is M67 fragmentation grenade. Consolidating its name in the as a Frag Grenade, Karito pulled the pin with his mouth. The safety lever remained restrained.

He threw all of them together to the other side of barricade. As the safety lever flew with a light metal sound, it ignited the time fuse inside. It quickly disappeared between the hordes of the Alwina army.

"Everyone, prepare for an explosionnnnnnn!!!!!!!"

He shouted as loud as possible so as as to not be drowned by the sound of battle. All the defence forces reacted immediately to Karito's threatening attitude after looking at the faces of their company next to themselves.

Precisely 4-5 seconds after he had thrown it, explosions occurred continuously in the middle of Alwina soldiers who had been trying to break through the barricade. The shock waves overlapped three to four times and hit against the hurriedly constructed barricade. As most of the shock wave was absorbed by the walls of human bodies, it escaped the fate of destruction.

Many people had seen depictions of bomb blasts with strong flames in the movies, but the real frag grenade was just like what its name implied, a weapon for killing an enemy using fragments scattering from the impact of the explosion. The depiction that it could blast away the body of large adult for several meters was almost fictional... while in fact, the most it could do was tear one or two limbs.

The Alwina soldiers who received direct hits by the grenade's explosion sustained multiple injuries from the iron pieces that scattered, much severely at the parts that were less protected by armor.

Especially those who were caught up nearby the explosion point, the power of the iron shards negated the use of armors. Many lost parts of their limbs midways. Such soldiers quickly died due to the shock of blood loss or intense pain.

As for the lucky ones... they had their necks torn off, or either the fragments pierced through their hearts leading to instant death without any pain. Those who were unlucky suffered from a slow death as they held their lost limbs within the pool of their own blood.

When the other Alwina soldiers who didn't get dragged into the explosion witnessed such a scene, they tried to make a new offensive moment to stimulate their fighting spirit. In an instant, they filled in the gap between them with the barricade.

But there was one man who tried to stop it.

Immediately after the grenades exploded, Karito jumped to the top of barricade and picked a newly added main weapon from the equipment list. Before the bomb's smoke cleared up, he had already stood on the top of barricade holding the AA-12 full automatic shotgun.



The ammunition that it used was the 00 buckshot bullets which holds 9 pellets. By installing the drum magazine, it was possible to fire 32 consecutive continuous shots.

Alwina soldiers who suffered serious injuries raised groans of pain underneath him. From the top of barricade, he could see the state of the Alwina army which filled up the main street. Isn't there about 3,000 people left?

"Sorry, but I have already made up my mind."

It was a simply a matter of choice. Karito stayed by Ordy's Defence Force, and eliminated the Alwina army instead.

Don't show any unnecessary sympathy. He persuaded himself that if he let any of them live, they would surely come back and point their blades to them again. If something were to happen to Reona, Rina or Ordy due to overlooking them, Karito would shoot his own head himself

That is why it was simply a matter of choice.

For the sake of Reona and the few people who were kind to him, he would kill the majority of the Alwina army. Karito could do that.

To live is to kill... Such phrase passed his mind, he had read or heard something similar somewhere before.

The gun in his arms spat out a storm of steel. The gun shot out 350 bullet per minute, and at the rate of over 6 times per second, scattering bullets shot out of the muzzle. The firing sound of 12 gauge worth of gunshots resounded on Karito's earlobes over and over again.

He slanted the muzzle slightly downward, and swiped it sideways as he barraged towards the Alwina army's direction. Since they were some distance away, it lost some power but the numerous scattered shots that were released at once covered the lost firepower.

A buckshot the size of a little finger sank into the armor. Tasting the shock for the first time, the bullet penetrated into their body giving damage. Amongst them, many of the soldiers took injuries around the body parts unprotected from their armours by the scattering bullets. Those hit on the neck and face had their flesh gouged out of place.

The soldiers who frontally took the strike crumbled down one after another. The detached soldiers' movement became dull as their vanguards and they were injured all at once.

Karito chased after them immediately. Switching his equipment quickly, he threw a spraying can type of grenade with a different shape aside from the fragment grenade. It fell right in front of the stalled detachment army.

Instead of causing blasts and splinters, it generated a white smoke. However, it was not of any ordinary smoke.

What followed after was the continuous sound of repeated coughing and sneezing. It could be heard coming from the other side of the thin smoke veil from the Alwina army's side, their reaction was as expected 'My eyes, my nose, somebody help me!'

The Alwina soldiers who were armed with swords and spears huddled together, falling into confusion as they suffered from the tear gas. Inside the smoke, things took a turn for the worse and they even started an internal breakout.

"Could that be something that blinds their eyes?"

"Yes, it is a tear gas grenade. The gas will remain for a while here and that it should hold them down a little bit. Let's retreat before the winds changed direction and blow it here..."

It was at this moment when he jumped off from the top of barricade while looking back towards Ordy.

As Karito's foot was about to touch the ground, a light ball flew out from inside the tear gas and landed just before the barricade. It was a stray magic bullet shot by a magician on the Alwina's side who panicked after his eyes and nose was ruined by the tear gas and had shot it off accidentally.

Being blown forward from the shock wave transmitted from the gaps of the improvised barrier, Karito accomplished to make an intense kiss with the ground.

'...So lame...' keeping the posture facing the ground without leaking a voice, Karito cried inside his heart.

“...A, anyways we have gained some time thanks to Karito. All soldiers, retreat back to the headquarters!”

“Ah, Karito, are you okay?”

“Carelessness is one’s greatest enemy...”

He was reflecting while being helped by Reona.

“Sorry Reona, please go back first. I will follow after immediately.”

“What are you saying, you aren’t thinking of confronting such large enemy again alone are you!?”

“No, it is different this time. I am just going to set up some traps to gain us more time.”

The survivors of the detached force spent valuable time till they were able to recover themselves from the confusion after the tear gas dispersed.

When the Sky Cavalry scout informed with hand gestures that the Defence Force which positioned themselves behind the barricade had already retreated, the commander of the detached force formed a battle line to remove the barricade.

The infantries walked over their dead comrades and climbed over the barricade, they threw the household goods that were stacked up, and some destroyed it with swords and axes. It was easy labor without the resistance of the beastman. The improvised barricade disappeared in a matter of minutes.

Once it disappeared, only the abandoned corpses of Defence Army remained on the road. There seemed to be no factor that would block the march of detached force anymore. If things stayed like this, the only thing left to do is only to conquer the enemy’s inner citadel.

Thus, the commander issued an order.

“Advance!”

“””””U000000000000o000!!!!”””””

With a battle cry, the detached force resumed their invasion with a destructive momentum likewise a flash flood.

And to be able to crush such momentum easily, they laid an ambush trap nearby. In the first place, there wasn't anyone of this world who was able to notice the real nature of the object the size of big lunch box made from iron that was installed within the shadows of the abandoned baggages and corpses.

The name of the object is M18 claymore, a directional personnel land mine.



In there were two interpersonal sensors, a built-in type with an automatic operation type, and a type where the installer could arbitrarily detonate through a remote control. The Claymore which has been set up around the barricade was the former one.

The foot where the vanguard soldier stepped on, invaded the detection range of the interpersonal sensor by a little.

It triggered.

The next moment, dozens of the survivors of the detached force were baptized by 700 shots that scattered in a fan shaped form, and literally, the soldiers burst from their original shape.

“Looks like they had caught the trap well.”

Karito looked back towards the rears where a low explosion echoed, with satisfied looks.

Because he had set up several claymore, even if the Alwina army doesn't want to, they

will still be forced to lost some time and soldiers

“Even though I have seen it so many times, as expected, Karito power is outrageous I think.”

“Not really, using such Claymore as traps is common practice in my world. It is not even my own power.”

“...to be able to handle such powerful weapon like that [Guns] is your strength huh?”

As he heard a sharp voice filled with coldness and likewise a blade made from ice, he turned his face back and found Ordy staring at him.

Although Karito didn't have any intentions to trick him, at the very end, he still kept his mouth shut without giving the full details, thus he averted his face with guilty conscience.

Ordy had purposely not question the circumstances around that area, but there is no way Karito could evade this matter any longer as he had displayed his powers in such a flashy way.

“Still, it is not much of a big deal. Because the guns and bombs which I used here is weapons that is produced in large quantities in my world.”

“In other words, each soldier in your world are equipped with such powerful weapons?”

“Well that, isn't wrong, but.”

To be precise, they were only reproductions of weapon of the real world inside the game, with adjusted balance on its performance problems, and exaggerated functions. It even enabled the usage of advanced weaponries seen only in science fictions, just like having one foot thrust into an experimental stage in reality to some level. On top of it all, as a part of the game system, Karito himself was upgraded as the owner of abilities far beyond ordinary people, and even if he was to give a rough explanation, there are many thing that he couldn't explain.

So, when Karito was glared with a questioning gaze from a powerful person such as Ordy, even if he had acquired boldness from the experience of setting foot on a scene

of bloodshed, his basic mental content as someone weak hearted, Karito's mind was on verge of crumbling down on the spot.

This time, Karito waited for his expression to change back to sincerity from someone about to cry, for if Ordy had wished to touch on the subject, it would be very distressful. It was so uncomfortable for Karito that he wondered if there could be anymore battle with the Alwina army that he could participate in.

"I do not think you have to explain the anymore details this time. However, since it has become like this, could you please lend your powers to repel the Alwina army? I believe this is the only way to use your abilities."

"Father..."

"...that is my intention. Since I can't escape anymore, the only way is to fight. I will not abandon Reona and the others."

"That is pleasant thing to say!"

"Gufu!"

Karito was hit on the back of his head by a smiling Reona whose face turned slightly red, managed to barely avoid kissing the ground for a second time as they head towards the headquarters. Pain stung through the back of his head.

"On 4 o'clock direction, Enemy Sky Cavalry formation approaches!"

They looked up towards the sky from the sudden warning, and there surely was a formation of 4 Sky Cavalry raiding dragons tearing through the sky.

However, the formation of dragon did not head towards Karito's group, but towards the headquarters. It seemed like they were trying to bomb the headquarters directly. At another direction, another formation with similar mobility was also approaching towards the headquarters. Due to the difference of altitude and long distance, Karito could only see it off.

"Does the air superiority already be taken by the enemies?"

"Ah, because there is a big difference in strength and ability of the Citadel Defense and the Sky Cavalry force, there's nothing much we can do. The Sky force of this side is as

good as defeated.”

“Doesn't that mean that the sky defenses are as good as naked?”

“No, it depends.”

Simultaneously with Ordy’s words, a stream of light shot from the roof of the headquarters.

Giving the impression similar to a magic canon, he understood that it was a type of magic. But immediately, the beam of light deviated suddenly from its path and chased around the tail of the formation dragons as if it was a hunting dog. And not just one, but there were 10 of it, intercepting another Sky Cavalry from another direction with a bending beam of the same size.

When the light ball caught on the tails of Alwina Sky Cavalry, it exploded like a chain reaction. Jostled by the shockwaves, the other Sky Cavalry units who did not receive a direct hit were caught up in the impact and made to fall in semi circular motions along with their dragons and gryphons.

“...what is that?”

“Magic missile. It is classified as an elementary magic, but there is only one person who is able to shoot this much and at the same time and manipulate it individually. She’s the only one in this town who can accomplish such a feat. ”

As he looked closer, the ringleader who shot out the barrage of magic missiles wrapped her body in a black robe.

Amongst all the people Karito had recognized, being the only magician and with such appearance, there was only one person that crossed his mind.

When it was confirmed that all survivors including Karito and Reona have crossed the bridge, the bridge was lifted, cutting off the route that connected the headquarters to the downtown area.

CHAPTER 12

BATTLE IN CITADEL (4)

They might have arrived in the headquarters safely, but the place had turned into a battlefield on its own sense.

It was a battle between the soldier doctors and medics treating the severely injured people who were desperately holding onto their life against the Death God, waiting with his large sickle to pull the souls from their bodies.

The first floor of the headquarters and barracks was turned into a field hospital, the overflowing injured people were lying directly on the ground leaking out voices of agony. There were lots of people beyond saving as their chest didn't move up and down anymore.

Alongside of the walls were the refugees looking at the disastrous scene of hell with frightened expressions. They were like Karito's group who had escaped from the main street that has been blocked up by the Alwina's detached force and barely escaped from the massacred place. Their faces all lost its vitality and despair took over.

While Ordy was looking for a doctor, Karito and Reona accompanied his injured subordinates, then Ordy's name was called by an extremely loud voice that seemed to echo throughout the building.

"Ordy, is the third platoon leader Ordy here?!"

"Did you call me? Sir commander!?"

When that person found Ordy's figure,... [person]?, he found that it was a half man and half horse much bigger compared to ordinary centaurs of Alwina Defence Force. The centaur then released a rough snort as he made his appearance.

On his back, sat an oversized long bow. All the parts were made entirely with metal, no matter how you looked at it, it was a very powerful weapon. The arrows contained in the barrel were also made from metal, even the diameter of the handle was twice bigger than normal arrows.

“Excuse me, even though you had retreated back here, the castle gates on the border side had also been seized by the Alwina army. You need to move out together with the soldiers that can still move in order to protect the survivors and intercept the main army coming in pursuit.”

“Understood. Will commander engage too?”

“I can’t just rush out and abandon issuing commands from the base. I hate how I only can shoot arrows from the distance.”

Even though the Commander had stated so, but Ordy knew.

This commander was once an active fighter with a long military record, and his strength was top-class even among all the demi-human tribes. His favorite bow which was bestowed with spirit power was said to have enough power to shoot down a dragon in a single shoot. Moreover, it is also a characteristic of the Centaurus tribe to be the masters of archery.

If one were to receive a hit from the arrow that he released, it will even pierce through a fully equipped Orc with a large shield.

“I entrust it to you. I am relying on the mobility of you and your men.”

Relaying only such orders, the commander left quickly for the gate on the border side.

Ordy looked back towards his subordinates. There was around $\frac{1}{3}$ who were unhurt or only with slight injuries. Although their fatigue had accumulated, you must not underestimate the stamina of beastmen. All of the men that had been trained by Ordy could run around steep mountains for three days and three nights straight.

The only problem lies in their equipments. Even if they were to split into two and attack, their fighting power is too different. If they wanted to stop an overwhelming enemy troops without direct confrontation, it could only be done with a guerilla war using gunpowder or magicians.

“Are there no remaining magicians in hand?”

“No, most of the remaining magicians here had used too much of their magic and were

already exhausted their physical strength to the limit. The magicians who are still able to move are used to strengthen the defenses of the headquarters so we can't bring them along."

"What about the explosives?"

"That is..."

The subordinate pointed to a building that was built on a remote place to minimize the damages that could be dealt to the headquarters and barracks in cases of emergency, the warehouse ——— at that place.

Yet, what was left there now was only a mountain of rubble.

"It seemed that there was a tenacious guy in the enemy's Sky Cavalry that went around bombarding the headquarters, and seemed to have dropped all the explosives just before he was shot down and blown away. Thanks to that, not only have several soldiers and refugees who had escaped here earlier fallen victim and died, but it seemed that the provisions that were brought by the reinforcements were also gathered in there. There are considerable amounts of weapons and spare arrows left in the reinforcements' supply carriage, however there are no explosives left."

"That's troublesome indeed."

In a glimpse of only a few moments, Ordy's line of vision was immediately directed towards Karito.

Noticing what Ordy wanted to say, he replied with a silent consent.

Even though the battlefield was scary, he doesn't want to run away at his own convenience, there are times in which he should stand up. Especially when he was asked by someone he is in debt to.

"I will cooperate."

"I am sorry, our power simply isn't enough."

"I don't mind, I have already rode the ship. In order to survive, I will do what I can till the end."

Ordy's beastly ears fell flatly as he apologetically lowered his head as it showed the state of his heart, Karito made a wry smile as the gap appearance reminded him of a solitary wolf.

Reona joined in the talk too. The first thing she said was.

"Then I will fight together with you too!"

"That won't do."

She was immediately rejected by Ordy and Karito who both answered at the same time. She glared at her father and her benefactor as she bared her canines grimacing in vexation.

"You saw me a while ago, I can fight just fine! Why is Karito allowed while I am not!?"

"The circumstances are different between you and Karito. Karito can materialize something that we and other people can't. Reona, you ought to understand. I feel sorry to utilize him too, but I can't say any extravagant things anymore."

"But I am still a member of the Garm Tribe, as a fine warrior———"

"What do you plan to do with Rina? If I were to fall on the battlefield and you followed after, who will protect that little child? Rina is still a child who has not finished her 'Moonlight Night Ceremony' yet."

"That is..."

Reona shrank down as Ordy's words hit on the sore spots. The Garm Tribe do have a very solid solidarity, but Rina and Reona doesn't have any relatives other than her father.

"If something happens to me, I entrust Rina to you. Please protect an important member of our family in my place. It is hard too for me to ask since you have taken care of that child since your mother's death, I am sorry."

"Father..."

“Don’t cry. this is not necessarily a farewell.”

The father’s big palm rested on Reona’s head and ruffled her hair. A few drops of tears marked the ground as Reona looked down.

“Let’s go. Let’s support our allies’ retreat as much as possible.”

“Roger that.”

Ordy and his subordinates, with their beastmen characteristic parade, rushed out into the main street that leads to the gate of the border side.

As if to run after Karito’s back , “Karito!” Reona shouted. Reona looked straight at him with bloodshot eyes.

“Father———I entrust Father to you! You must absolutely bring him back safely!”

“OK, leave it to me!”

He raised his thumb up and lifted his lips forming a fearless grin. Even though he understood that he does not look like those main characters from action movies, at least he wanted to show off something for this charming girl.

“And you too, make sure you come back safely! If you die, I will go to the next world and send you flying!”

Receiving such a vigorous voice from behind, Karito rushed out again in order to catch up with Ordy’s group.

While going against the flow of the allied troops escaping towards the headquarters, he was able to join up with Ordy immediately on the main street. He was waiting in front of the buildings along the main street.

“Go to the building’s roof. It will be much faster if we move from roof to roof.”

As instructed, Karito and Ordy’s group went to the top floor, they jumped out from the windows and landed on the roof. Everyone else were beastmen so they were able to jumped easily without their’s comrade support. Karito also succeeded with ease thanks to the influence of his enhanced Parameters in <WBG0>. Ordy’s subordinates

who had been divided into two groups, also got onto the roof in the same way on the buildings across the main street.

“There!”

Ordy pointed towards the Alwina flagpole that was fluttering in the middle of the main street. A wave of the Alwina main force was heading towards the headquarters with visible speed. The soldiers defending the castle gate on the border site were gradually being reduced by the human waves.

The sound of rough, running footsteps reverberates even to the unstable roofs. Some roof shingles looked like they were about to give up under the stomping but they didn't stop nevertheless. Looking at the figures of the beastmen nimbly flying over the buildings, Karito remembered the famous action movie Parkour in his previous world.

As soon as they approached the advancing Alwina army that was filling the main street, they found out that the battle line's vanguard was not of any ordinary soldiers'.

Their huge flesh of body seemed to stretch out twice the size of a large adult. Their ugly appearance resembled that of a pig's. Since they looked like a very familiar villain monster that appeared in fantasies, Karito immediately identified the real nature of this enemy.

“Could that be an Orc?”

“That is right. They are going to be troublesome, they will not go down with a half assed attack. At the very least, you will need an attack similar to a heavy cavalry with a lance and charge to kill them with one blow. A long-distance magic attack from a magician will be the most effective in this case.”

With a group of more than 100 Orcs leading them, rows of soldiers composed of ordinary soldiers followed a little bit behind them. He felt that the Orc's group was being used as a shield for the Alwina main army.

The Orc's wore brigandines, an armour made from the best quality of leather sewed with several small pieces of metal and worn like an apron, they mainly wield giant axes and maces as their weapons. Their victim's blood was still stuck on their bodies and weapons, and seemed like they didn't maintain their weapons since their blades were chipped in some places, and bloodstains caked here and there.

One of the Defense soldiers at the rear that wasn't able to escape, fell victim to the Orc's group. Swinging their maces carelessly, they crushed the upper parts of that soldier's body together with his protective gear, and flung him towards the buildings. A vulgar smile that reeked of stench leaked out from the Orc's mouth.

"Anyways, slow them down with the Archers. After that———sorry, but will you be able to do it?"

"Yes, I think I can manage somehow."

Karito re-equipped the AA 12 as he replied to Ordy. But, he switched the ammunition from the buckshot bullet to another kind of bullet. For such huge monsters that was equipped with protective gears, ordinary buckshot bullets might not be able to do the job.

The plastic part of the cartridge that peeked out of the insertion point of the magazine was green in colour. Aligning the dented rear part of the magazine into the guided rail part of the trigger guard, and the ammo was loaded with a satisfying click...

The Orc battle line had already drawn near several house away from the building where Ordy's group and Karito hides.

With nods as if saying 'anytime', Ordy sent a signal with hand gestures to his subordinate on the opposite building. After adjusting the timing, the subordinates who were holding arrows exposed themselves the moment he raised his hand and clench it into a fist.

A dozen or so arrows were shot towards the Orcs. The tip pierced into their exposed shoulders, but because of the thick fat and muscle of their huge body, the piercing was far from giving them fatal injuries.

But, they were able to fulfill their purpose. When the Orc groups discovered Ordy's group shooting arrows at them, they stopped their legs and raised a cry of anger. The following Alwina army had taken notice of the assault too.

"Now!"

Ordy gave the signal. Karito raised his body alone this time as the subordinates lie

down, then he fired the AA-12.

What happened next was a small explosion. The Orc's upper body that was on the fire line was blasted away and disappeared. The Orcs' movement who fell into rage stopped all at once as they witnessed the death of their fellows.

Ignoring the Orcs' bewilderment, Karito kept shooting at them without a care. An explosion occurred on the Orc's body each time the AA-12 was fired. Bows and arrows were out of the question, each time the ammunition made contact with their protective gears, large holes would decorate the Orcs' giant bodies from the blast.

Pieces of flesh mixed with armor pieces scattered around. Fragments of their fellows poured onto the Orc's following after them, the numerous dead bodies turned into obstacles to those of the living.

The 32 fires caused 32 small explosions. The explosive smoke mixed with the blood mist drifted into the main street. Dozens of Orc's corpse covered the road in an instant.

Silence came abruptly. The surviving Orcs and the Alwina army that trailed behind them, became dumbfounded while looking at the scene right in front of them. Without any clear indication of magic such as light bullets and fireballs, each time the sound of the footsteps of a gigantic beast rang, the Orcs ended up being blown away. The enemies couldn't even catch up with such development...

Ordy's group was also feeling the same thing. having forgotten that their sense of hearing was temporarily paralyzed because of 12 cases worth of gunshots just now, all of them stared dumbfoundedly at Karito as they can't believe the reality displayed in front of them.

That person himself felt a sense of nervousity from facing the number of enemies that exceeded tens of thousands in addition to the visual impact of the large groups of Orcs at the same time. However, in the contrary to that, he was loading a new drum magazine with mechanical precision while maintaining a calm thought.

“(As one would expect from the Frag-12, this rapid-fire, this power is no joke.)”

——— The nature of the bullets that was used was Frag-12. To put it simply, it is a small, high-explosive projectile for shotguns. In <WBGO> it is an ammunition that was banned to use for PVP (Tactical Combat Mode) alongside the drum magazine

specialized for the AA-12.



Despite saying that it was the small version, the destructive power of the warhead itself was on a different league from the explosive bullets for pistols or rifles. Since it can pierce through even 1 cm thick of iron plates, any ordinary armor will not be useful at all. Even if the Orc was of the size of a small elephant, it will be easy to blow their body and vital points into pieces.

However, no matter how ugly the opponent is, looking at the flesh and blood being turned into mincemeat by their own hands, anyone would feel the insides of their stomachs churn. It made Karito gulped remembering the figures of the Defense Force soldiers that were turned into mush by the Orcs' hands.

The other side surely mass-produced the corpses in a similar way too. It is just that the tables have turned the other way this time.

Firing the Frag-12 again, Karito opened a large hole on the Orc's chest along with its armor, another Orc got their shoulder blown away and it's arm flew in the air, and another Orc had most of its internal organs gouged out from its abdomen with its remainings scattered around. In a blink of an eye, another dozen of mutilated Orc corpses was produced.

As the one-side massacre started again, the Orcs lucky to survive were trying for a counterattack, but they having no tactics or weapons to deal with a distanced enemy, they could only throw themselves to the enemy with their strength and endurance. However, before they could even approach, the road was already been blocked by the corpses of their own race and the ruins of the destroyed buildings. Including the Alwina army following behind, they had no way to move forward.

"Pre, prepare the 2nd shoot! Aim at the soldiers at the back!"

When the sound of gunshot reverberated again beside him, Ordy came to his senses, and shouted out loudly as to not be drowned by the sound of the gunshots. He once again used hand gestures to signal his subordinates to prepare the second volley at the same time. and the arrows were released.

The arrows flew over the heads of the Alwina army who had delayed reactions, and screams rose in several places. Some infantries who were unlucky got their armor pierced and those who took the arrows directly on their heads fell down. one of the soldiers received the arrow in the neck resulting in his carotid artery being torn and the blood spraying to his comrades making them fall into panic.

Looking at the scene where the Orcs that they were depending and using as a shield fall to some unknown attack from some dozen of enemy soldiers, they panicked. The archers and magician units that were placed behind the infantry became puzzled as they couldn't grasp the detailed situation with their view being blocked by their comrades.

It was at that moment when Karito lowered his body on the roof and took out a new drum magazine to reload for second time,

One of the Orc that lost its temper threw a big axe of the same height as an adult towards Karito.

“It's dangerous!”

Ordy who was next to him reacted faster to the thing aimed at Karito. Immediately after grabbing Karito's arm, he threw himself to the side and and they rolled together, the hug axe then hits the roof. The power went beyond the level of striking the roof top. With the Orc's physical strength, it was able to throw a few dozen kg of axe which opened a large hole on the building and crashed to the opposite side.

Karito was frozen dumbfounded as he didn't even notice the small fragments of shingles that was scattered by the impact scratched his cheek.

“Be careful, I may not be able to protect you all the time.”

“Tha, thank you.”

Later on, when Karito recalled it, it was a miracle that he didn't wet himself.

Meanwhile, the Orc's group with their high fighting spirit (or it is just the reckless rush) tried to advance forward and attack once again. Just as Karito was setting up his gun after regaining his composure, soon he cursed again.

"Did they just use the corpses of their ally as a shield?!"

Certainly, this was a realistic and effective means, and it has been proven that the human body has sufficient strength to stop the hand grenade splinter, though it can't be said that it was a comfortable thing to actually witnessed such an act. You all just got the brain of a wild boar and yet making this unnecessarily cunning move!

He tried shooting at them and the explosion bursts on the surface of the giant corpse lifted up, and their foot stopped for a moment due to the impact, but resumed their charge immediately. If the opponents were ordinary man then... But the enemy was using a meat shields that were nearly 3 meter in height and weighs several hundred kilograms, one or two shots would be insufficient.

Then.

"Then, it is time to cook them into well done!"

What he chose from the equipment list was an incendiary grenade. The Burning Grenades in <WBGO> was said to be the type that uses thermite reaction caused by oxidation between aluminium and other metals. After the pin was pulled out, it was thrown to the feet of the Orcs charging while using the corpses as the shield.

The flames caused by thermite reaction was white like sunlight. The Orcs plunged into the center of the blast unknowingly and was wrapped up by a blinding white flame as they roared and scattered around, suffering from the pain. The white flames of a thousand degree celsius carbonized them to the bone instantly, the burning smell of death spread out to the surrounding area.

Throwing a few more, the wide road was blocked by a super high temperature flame wall. Like this, it should be able to stop the Orcs and Alwina main army for a while.

...It was still too early to relax.

“Magic Incoming!!!!”

Ordy's subordinates from the opposite building issued a warning. A magic and ridiculous amount of arrows to count were fired from the middle of the Alwina main force's rank and successively crossed over the heads of the infantries.

“Everyone evacuate away from the rooftop!”

Ordy immediately made the decision. Karito's group retreated inside through the hole that was made by the Orc a little while ago.

The cheap building vibrated. Since the Alwina army didn't know the exact position of Ordy's group, they fired a barrage of shots to suppress and check their position. Even though the strong magic bullets didn't hit either of the buildings, but it landed in the neighbouring buildings. The shock wave by the loud explosion caused the remaining window glasses to quiver. Several arrows that accidentally passed through the large hole pierced near Karito's feet.

Looking outside from the window facing the main street, the Alwina main force were advancing in the place of the almost annihilated Orc units. With the combination of long spears and big shield into a row of horizontal line, together with the support fire from the rear, the power of the advancing infantry line was beyond description.

However, as soon as they reached the pile of Orcs corpses that were scattered around, they stopped. The scale of their formation was too big for them to slip through, and the flames from the incendiary grenades still remained.

Putting away the Orcs' bodies and extinguishing the fire would take them awhile to reorganize and advance again.

“Alright, once we retreat and take a position, we will ambush them once more. Let's quickly move away from this place.”

Karito obediently follow the decision of Ordy who is the Commander.

Even though he felt that it was too rash, he instinctively realized that it would be much better to obey the judgments of an experienced superior with the current situation.

— The battle is not over yet.

CHAPTER 13

BATTLE IN CITADEL (INTERMISSION)

“ ————— I am back.”

The piled up sandbags and abandoned household goods formed a new defense camp near the drawbridge that connected to headquarters in the shape of the letter 『C』 .

The defense soldier placed on guard replied curtly with an “Ou” when he saw Karito returned with the accompaniment of one of Ordy’s subordinate. The subordinate who came along with him was a man of the Garm Tribe (a wolf therianthrope), just like his Captain, Ordy, but most of the soldiers placed for the Defense Camp were humans.

The night had completely fallen and numerous torches were lit around the headquarters, scattering illumination around and exposing any enemies that would creep out from the dark world.

“Is there any movement from over there (the Alwina army)? ”

“There was no change so far. They seemed to have completely stopped their movements in the middle of main street. It is so obvious that they are being cautious ever since they got caught by the traps that you have set up.”

Although they have succeeded in invading the Citadel city, the Alwina army stopped their advancement to a mere hundred meters away without being able to reach the headquarters by the time the sun had set.

The reason was of course the result of Karito and Ordy’s group, and a few people from the Citadel Defense Forces repetitive delaying attempts against them.

The content of the tactics were really simple, when the Alwina force advanced, Karito’s group who lay hidden in the buildings along the main street, will deliver attacks as they were caught by the claymore landmines and stopped moving, Karito’s group will then retreat before the Alwina army could recover from the confusion. The process will then be repeated.

The effective distance of the Claymore which could shoot out 700 iron bullets at a time, is around 50m. The scope of the iron balls could cover the sides of the main street from one side to the other if the angle was adjusted. There was no escape for the Alwina soldiers who filled the main street in rows.

At least 100 infantrymen fell victim to the Claymore in a single suppression. The speed of the iron balls released at once by the high performance explosives wasn't something that could be compared with stone throwing or arrows. The soldiers had their bodies successively destroyed along with their shields and armours.

In addition, when their formation stopped due to the explosions, Karito's group who had hidden on the top floor of the buildings, showered them with arrows, bullets, and grenades (Karito shared with them and easily taught Ordy and the rest on how to use it). On the contrary, brave soldiers who stepped up to help their companions became easy targets.

Just like that, a few tens of them fell victims again. The enemy paid the price in losing more than 200 casualties and injuries in just one ambush attack. If this was to be repeated many times, it was not something that even the Alwina army who still have 10,000 soldiers can endure. The soldiers' morals had plummeted onto the ground a long time ago.

Of course, the Commander of the Alwina army had tried several countermeasures. However, even when they had sent the Sky Cavalry ahead to scout from the sky, they couldn't possibly detect those hiding under the roofs unless they got see-through abilities.

If it was the case, they would have destroyed any buildings that seemed to be the hidden places of the Defense Force using the magic from the Magician units, but then the stamina of those magicians would be empty before they could even attack the fundamental headquarters command center. Almost all of the magicians of the Alwina troops had been exhausted from the fierce fight that broke through the two layers of the castle's urban area.

Above all, what scared the vanguards to advance forward was its spontaneity. Unable to detect any signs of magic and arrow attacks, every step they took closer to the enemy headquarters, showers of iron balls and explosion assaulted them from the front. Having been caught by it for several times, the infantries taking the brunt of the attack were almost in a panicked state.

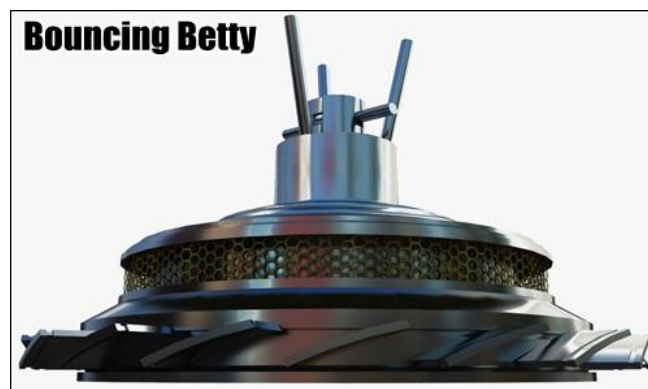
Of course, the Commanders knew fully well the importance of the infantries even though they aren't as rare as archers and magicians.

As result, taking into account of the need to restore the stamina of the magicians in charge of support attacks and to appease the infantries' who were falling into a panicked state, the Alwina army decided to stop their advance.

"I have also set up traps in the alley entrance near the headquarters, so we will be able to know immediately if the enemy had come from the back alley from the explosions. However, since it sets off indiscriminately, please tell the others not approach to it as much as possible."

By the way, what Karito had set up in the alleys was not a claymore, but another trap called the bouncing betty.

Bouncing Betty is the popular name of a bouncing landmine. It was another type with interpersonal sensor built into it, and when a person approaches within a fixed range, the safety device will disengage and its main body will jump in front of the enemy and explode in the air scattering the splinters. Among the wide variety of antipersonnel landmines, it is one of the dreadful kinds. As it explodes in the air, it has a wide range and once set in a narrow space like the alley, there was no place for the enemy to escape.



The position of the trap was displayed on the PDA as part of the game's specification, and it is possible to avoid and collect the traps by sneakily approach it, but there was no way for them to know about it.

Because the Alwina army also had lighten up their torches, there was a blank spot where darkness spread out on the main street between the headquarters and the

Alwina army's camp. Since there were some points where the Claymore has been installed, even if they were to try creeping close under the cover of the darkness, they will be discovered sooner or later.

A shadow of a Sky cavalry circled around the sky above the Alwina main army in vigilance. The Defense Force side however did not have enough aerial forces to even do that.

"Hey Karito, go and take a rest too. we will keep watch here, so at least go and fetch your meal inside."

"No, I am still okay. I am not that hungry yet."

"Nevermind that and just go take a rest. This is an order, not a suggestion. Your face looks pretty awful right now."

"...then, I will take your offer."

Although it was not as strong as Ordy, nevertheless, being told so by a powerful gaze made Karito drew back his body in dejection as he headed towards the drawbridge, suddenly remembering something, he operated his PDA and made a U-turn back to the defense camp.

"Then I will leave this here just in case."

Simultaneously, something appeared on Karito's arms, and he placed a two legged standard equipment on the sandbag. The soldier was stunned as they looked at the object made from metal and a material that they have never seen before.

"Wh, what is this?"

"A M240 light machine gun ——— well, to put it simply, it is one of the weapons of my world. Please use it when the Alwina army attacks."



He continued to operate his PDA and decided to leave around 1000 ammunition of the M240 just in case. Then, the 7.62 mm Nato bullets linked to the belt link appeared like a small mountain.

“The bullets have been loaded, and all you need to do is just to grip this place like this and pull this trigger, then the bullets will continuously come out from this muzzle. When the bullets lined up here are used up or if it can’t be fired, please call me.”

Even though they had seen Karito using similar weapons many times before , it was the first time for Ordy’s subordinate and the soldiers to touch it, and they gripped on the M240 timidly as they were told. They tried to imitate Karito, and when they were just about to place their finger on the trigger, Karito stopped them.

“There are other points to take note of, while you are shooting, this barrel part will become quite hot, so be careful to not touch it with your bare hands. Also, please be careful not to point it towards strange directions if you are surprised by the loud sounds that will be produced continuously.”

“Un, understood. We will be careful.”

“This is my first time to see a weapon like this.”

“This is heavier than a sword.”

While hearing the soldiers’ comments on the back, Karito staggered across the lowered drawbridge and entered the headquarters.

Inside the fort which surrounded the headquarters and barracks, it was somewhat filled with a gloomy atmosphere. The source were the people who didn’t manage to escape before the Alwina army attacked, likewise Karito and Reona’s group, and with no other choice, the refugees could only escape to the headquarters. Their numbers amounted to more than several hundreds of people.

The children who couldn’t suppress their fear sobbed in the arms of their family members. That alone was enough to make the surroundings fall into depression. Their parents desperately tried to stop the cries but to no avail.

The strong sense of uneasiness assaulted the adults when they thought of being

isolated by enemy's attacks, and the wariness and murderous intent released from the surviving Defense Force soldiers caused the young, sensitive children not to be able to calm down easily.

Amongst them were also children who had lost their entire family, and there was no one left who could comfort them anymore. Of course, the surroundings didn't have any leeway to care for them.

Karito glanced at such sight from the corner of his eyes, letting himself tumble against an empty side of a wall. The surrounding noise seemed like an event from a distant world.

Looking at his own hands, he had dirtied it without realising. His hands were stained from the gunpowder of countless bullets he shot, the ashes from burning flesh and soot, and probably the enemies' blood.

He silently operated the PDA, pulled a mineral water out of the item box, and poured it over his palms. He rubbed both of his hands trying to wash off the dirt as much as possible, and then threw the remaining contents of the bottle onto his head.

As the lukewarm water washed his head, he could feel his mind clearing up by a little bit. Just like they have said, Karito's current state was pretty bad. Although it was just his body was a little bit fatigued. No, isn't that fact itself is strange?

"After shooting that much, it will be strange if my body doesn't hurt at all..."

The moment he felt exhaustion catching up, his stomach growled.

It wasn't a small growl or a cute growling of the stomach, but it was a rumble a magnificent growl that indicated his stomach complaints of hunger.

Just today, Karito could no longer remember how many humans and beastmen he had turned into lumps of protein, yet he himself was healthily rumbling his own stomach, something must be wrong with him, he thought himself.

Nevertheless, it is a fact that he was hungry, and when he was about to take out a war ration from the item box to eat dinner, Reona and Rina found Karito's figure and approached him.

"I'm glad you are safe. But Karito your face looks awful right now. Did something happen?"

"...Does my face look that awful?"

"Rather than awful, it is more like grim. Especially around the eyes..."

"Does it give that impression?"

"Yeah, like the eyes of a wounded beast that can't move and became extremely agitated and ferocious."

"Although it is a difficult example to understand, I understand that it is quite bad."

He dropped his shoulders while massaging the area between his eyebrows when he heard the sisters' words. Although his body itself inherited the status from the game settings and has physical strength easily exceeding any regular people, however rather than the body, it seemed that Karito's spirit was the one considerably exhausted over several hours of on going battle.

"Are you okay?"

"Yes, there is no injury. Me and onee-chan is alright."

"I see. That is good."

"Hey Karito, what is that wound?"

As Reona brought her face closer, Karito spontaneously withdrew his head. He suddenly swung back forgetting the wall behind, the back of his head hit it immediately. After holding the back of his head in agony for a while, he looked up again as his nose almost touched with Reona's face. He became surprised again and repeated it a few times.

While his eyes became tearful from the accumulated pain on the back of his head, Reona finally pointed out, a wound about several cm in length was engraved on his cheeks.

"I wonder when I was injured. Was it when the orc threw the axe?"

“We, were you fighting with an Orc!?”

“Yeah. Because there was also support from Ordy-san and that the target is big, I defeated it pretty easily. It made a big hole on the roof of the building where we were hiding, and it did freak me out.”

“I think that Orcs are not an opponent that can be beaten with simply expressing it by freaking out. Anyways you might want to disinfect the wound before it starts festering.”

“That is right. But I do not have any antiseptics or anything...”

Speaking about recovery item inside , it mostly referred to the pencil type of syringe. And within there was no concept of bleeding injuries, the only recovery item was to restore LP (Life Points) which was reduced by damage.

However, when he used a recovery item after arriving in this world, Karito noticed that it was designed to treat injuries as well as LP (Life Points). The resurrection medicine used on Rina was a good example.

Except damages resulting in an instant death, if the resurrection medicine could be delivered within a certain period of time after the death, it will have the same effect as a physical recovery medicine, where after the resurrection, the wounds on the belly would be closed up in a blink of an eye and there was not even a single scar left on the body. However, if asked what will happen with torn off limbs, he couldn't give an answer since he has never tried it before.

Anyways, to use the recovery medicine just for one small wound, Karito thought, although the item can be used indefinitely, the spirit of not to be wasteful has been imprinted among Japanese people from ancient times to instinctively avoid being wasteful more than necessary.

When Karito was hesitating, Reona took action.

“It can't be helped, I will disinfect it.”

“I appreciate tha——— wait a minute your face is too close, too close!”



Reona's face got even closer as she grabbed Karito's head with both of her hands to stop him from moving. As Reona's body suddenly leaned onto his own and the feeling of her breath on his face, he can't help his face become increasingly hot.

"Hey don't struggle."

"Even if you said so, what do you plan to do?"

"Like I said, I am going to sterilize it"

Reona extended her tongue to touch Karito's cheek.

A warm tongue smeared with saliva traced on the wound on his cheek. The stinging kind of sensation was somewhat indescribable as the touch of the tongue was slightly rough like a dog, the warm saliva, Reona's erotic face as she opened her mouth and stuck out her tongue, the feeling of Reona's body as she leaned on, a large amount of information passed through Karito's mind as he froze for several seconds. Currently, his brain was restoring its functions.

His mind successfully restarted at the same time as Reona's face got away.

"If it is only a scratch, you can just lick it to sterilize it. Does it still hurt? "

"Th, that was quite a good performance "

"??? performance? What do you mean?"

"Ah, don't worry if you don't understand it. And the two of you haven't eat dinner yet, do you want to eat together?"

"Of course!"

"Thank you."

He took out military rations for 3 people from the item box. This time, it was french military rations (commonly called by R.I.E). It is a type that does not require fire and can be eaten without warming it up.

The main dish was canned beef salad. Although it says salad, the beef was cooked

properly together with beans and sauce.

“Delicious, it is delicious. Even if it is cold, it is still delicious as usual.”

“True, it is the first time for me to eat something like this. It is really delicious.”

Now that he think about it, is it safe for Reona and people from this world to eat a processed food?

In the manga with the same settings which Karito read in the past, (the one where SDF troops made a time slip and arrive in the Sengoku period. No, that one was a time slip while this one is an alternate world trip.) the humans from the past had spoiled their stomachs because they ate the food SDF brought, remembering that development, he couldn't help but worry for them. Just the other day when they ate together, there doesn't seem to be any complications.

While thinking so, he swore to apologize if such a thing ever occurred next time.

“What were the two of you eating when you were living in the village?”

“Umm, mostly animals hunted in the forest, the vegetables raised by everyone in the village, and the fishes we caught in the nearby river. It was then cooked by Rina at home. I only specialize in catching though.”

“Do you hunt animals using traps and arrows or something like that?”

“That is only for humans I guess. If it is only a wild boar, using bare hands is enough for me. If I am to use spirit magic, I can even knock down a bear in a single shot.”

“...such a wild thinking.”

“I, I am not good at hunting, but I do go fishing with the children of the same age group.”

“Fishing huh. I have never even been to the fishing pond in the neighborhood.”

“What is a fishing pond?”

Forgetting that they were in the midst of deadlock with the enemy, they continued to

eat lively, that was when they noticed someone staring at them that they stopped the chatter.

Before they knew it, a young child had appeared. A cute sound of growling coming out from his stomach could be heard.

“Are you hungry?”

“...(*nods *nods)”

The boy nodded silently. Looking at his slightly dirty figure, they immediately realized that the child was a survivor from the refugee attacked by Alwina’s detached force.

“Do you want to eat this?”

He took out the jelly bar dessert that was included in the R.I.E and tore open the wrapping paper. It was an orange coloured apricot flavor.

When the boy received the food that he saw for the first time, he gazed the jelly bar for a while before slowly carrying it nervously to his mouth, then he bit the tip a little bit.

The boy opened his eyes wide and his face became full smiles. Karito smiled too while looking at him.

After all, cheerful smiles looked much better for children.

“Is it delicious?”

“Yes! It is my first time to eat something like this!”

Then suddenly, his sight focused on the surrounding area behind the boy as he felt an even stronger stares coming from beyond the little boy.

This time, the refugees in the courtyard had gathered together and were staring at Karito. Even without sunlight or glasses, he could feel the pressure of the gazes, ‘Hiii’ Rina leaked out a small scream when she noticed it.

To be more accurate, the gaze of refugees were focused on the half eaten meal that the

three of them were holding.

The sound of stomach growling rumbled from everywhere.

“...does everyone want to eat too?”

All of them nodded simultaneously.

“There, there, no need to rush since there is enough share for everyone!”

“Oi the Ossan over there! As an adult don’t make a racket like children! Do you want me to sent you flying!?”

[TL: Ossan is a rude way to call old man, I leave it behind since it is much better than just use old man]

“Ye, yes, next person please!!”

Ordy who was bothered about the refugees after he had finished with the strategy meeting with each of the person in charge, became dumbfounded as he looked at the scene of Karito and his daughters sharing a large quantity of food out of nowhere to the refugees.

At the same time, Ordy also tried the food from the alternate world and liked it very much.

CHAPTER 14

ALAMO (1)

“That reminds me, I have not checked whether it works properly.”

Karito who suddenly remembered something, maneuvered towards a less crowded place at a corner of the courtyard where a pile of rubble, which used to be a warehouse, was located and operated his PDA.

Various parameters were displayed on the screen list, the BP (Battle Point) had increased nearly double from the last time as expected. As he had killed a considerable number of enemy soldiers along with the Alwina army that was caught by the Claymore attack, it is not surprising that it has increased by so much.

With the accumulation of the BP, more kinds of Support Request became available from the previous time. The problem, is whether the actual Support Request can be carried out in this world.

There is no other method than actually executing it to make sure.

“Which-one-should-I-choose... huh?”

An attack support will be too conspicuous and may cause panic within their own army, so he chose a material assistance request instead.

After selecting it, immediately after the price for the request support has been paid, with a ringing sound effect , a light gathered right in front of his palm and the next moment, it had morphed into the requested item.

The size is as big as a small compact all-terrain vehicle(ATV). The outline of the parts were covered by armored plate mimicking a small caterpillar tread, it looks like small tank. It was armed with a 7.62mm calibre light machine gun and 4 consecutive rocket launcher. Most importantly, is has the feature where it can be operated remotely via the PDA.

The one Karito summoned was an armed model of an Unmanned Ground Vehicle

(UGV).

“It seems like the Support Request can be used for time being.”

He muttered so as he stored the UGV that he had just been summoned into the item box. Additionally, a portion of the weapons were generally dropped from the Support Request and can not be placed into the equipment list, and it would need to be operated from PDA every time he wants store it in the item box. Similarly, Karito needs to open the item box every time he wants to use it and a time gap will be formed.

There will be no problem when being protected by teammates, however when participating in battle alone, it is necessary to be careful since a few seconds of defenseless tend to be fatal.

“(If I can use a support request, then the tactics that I can use will considerably increase. Anyway, I have to utilize what I can use.)”

As the UGV disappeared like a magic trick, an explosion echoed from somewhere.

The soldiers and refugees suddenly began to stir, Karito immediately noticed that it was the bouncing betty set up behind the alley. It was a sound that he have heard in the game over and over again that he can tell the difference by sound.

Still, he had troubled his allies carelessly, and in order to explain the circumstances, Karito headed for the headquarters.

Dawn came equally for everyone.

After spending one night on a main street too small for an army of over ten thousand, the Alwina army had regained their spirit and after rearranging the formation, they once again began their advance.

Of course, the Defense Force side had already sensed it, and as long as they can fight, even an injured person and male refugees were mobilized to prepare for the desperate resistance till the end. Women and children had already been evacuated to the underground warehouse installed in the headquarters. Persuaded by Karito and Ordy, Reona too reluctantly went to hide with Rina.

After finishing the installation of all preparations, with the headquarter’s permission,

Karito went to hide himself together with Ordy's group in the defensive position in front of the drawbridge. Looking at the bird's eye view image sent by the ultra small unmanned surveillance plane switch blade that he launched some time ago, he realized some questionable points.

"This, isn't their battle formation somewhat different from yesterday?"

He showed the PDA image to Ordy. Ordy, who questioned Karito's actions beforehand, understood immediately that the projection on the screen are the pictures of the Alwina army's battle formation from the sky. He convinced himself that it was meant to be like that and inspected the image as he swallowed his surprise.

Ordy immediately grasped the identity of the sense of discomfort that he felt. He clicked his tongue once.

"The magician unit had appeared in the front rows. The enemy magicians are now right behind the heavy infantries, and this thin light film which spreads in front of the heavy infantries is a defense magic, perhaps it is the enemy's tactic to advance while stopping the traps you have installed with defense magic."

"How strong is their defense magic?"

"It is quite strong. If casted by a high ranking magician, they can even stop an attack from a siege weapon easily———"

Two claymore burst simultaneously at the forefront of the Alwina troops as they approached the defense position slowly, stepping into the detection range. In no time, Karito heard the sound of screams.

Even though he couldn't grasp a detailed situation with his bare eyes as they were surrounded by a thin smoke from the explosion, the number of light dots displayed in the image sent from the <SwitchBlade> was reduced by about a dozen.

It seemed that the explosion from the Claymore reached the Alwina army perfectly.

"It seemed that the defense magic was of no use."

"...It seemed so."

After the sudden destruction of the heavy infantries and magician units, it was the Alwina army Sky Cavalry unit that came to invade the headquarters next.

Eight riders separated into 3 formations flew towards the headquarters. One formation consisting of half Dragons and half Griffons flew along the main street in positions to bombard the defense camp, swinging their body in small circles repeatedly as they flew in low altitude with a straight trajectory.

“Don’t be distracted with the left and right ones. Focus on the enemies in front!”

At a distance of around 250 meters, between the Sky Cavalry and the defensive camp, arrows, magic attacks, throwings by the beastman, and Karito’s FN and MK 48 light machine gun (the firearms come under the correct category for squad support), was released to the sky one after another.

While there were some who were able to escape by a hair’s breadth, there were also those who got pierced by arrows, released their holds on the reins, and fell from their dragons’ backs. While some of them plummeted onto the ground with a sound of something full of water being crushed, some of them were directly hit along with their Gryphons by magic bullets and were blasted in the air together. There were also two riders that got their head pierced by bullets consecutively as they fell through the roofs.

Still, the remaining 4 cavalry kept track on each other’s positions without communicating, and quickly covered the distance in no time. During that time, they noticed an unfamiliar object placed on a relatively flat roof of one the buildings slightly away from the defensive camp. Since they judged that there were no threat of ambush from it, they kept advancing towards the bombing target as it is.

That proved to be fatal. At the moment when their distance was only around 100m away in a straight line from the defensive encampment, the mysterious object that was placed on the roof suddenly moved. The object that looked like a stepladder with an upper part that looked like a pair of thick steel tubes, turned towards the Sky Cavalry and spit out fire.

Several 12.7 mm bullets spewed from the gun muzzle destroyed the riders and their winged beasts together. The Sky Cavalry crashed down from the air, scattering pieces of meat that can not be distinguished any longer.

Two units of the M2 heavy machine gun used as an automatic sentry gun, immediately locked on its next target, easily piercing through the outer skin that dragons boasted of, and bounced back arrows from the archers. The Sky Cavalry units who rushedly turned away was shot down quickly by another sentry gun installed on the opposite building across the main street.

“To easily annihilate a formation of Sky Cavalry from far away, the weapons from your world is amazing!”

“But, it has limited bullets and it will not respond toward the enemies outside its detection range!”

“Can not you just install it in large quantities?”

“There is a limit to the number it can be installed!”

Inside the game, the number of powerful weapons acquired from the Support request that can be installed at the same time is limited, even in this world it is impossible to install more than certain number no matter how Karito operated it.

The remaining two Alwina formation were either shot down entirely by the welcoming magic missiles released in large quantities from Headquarters, or were driven away before the bomb or breath could be released. They were able to survive this time, but if they were to be bombarded from all directions, he was worried whether the surviving magicians, sentry guns, and Marians would be able to cope up with the numbers.

The Alwina ground army also showed new movements at the same time with the Sky Cavalry offenses. As the infantry line divided, cavalry troops straddling their battle horse appeared.

They marched through the main street at full speed. Are they thinking of breaking through the Claymore’s effective range before its explodes?

“Such recklessness...”

The Claymore activated simultaneously as the person who set them up muttered in disgust. It is impossible to escape the rain of iron balls fired at supersonic blast with just a horse’s full dash. After getting hit by the Claymore, they turned into something

that can not be distinguished be they human or horse.

However, the cavalry repeatedly charged while raising war cries from their horses, and they followed in pursuit of one another behind the company. Following after, the smoke from the explosion that covered the battlefield, the troops advances, trampling over the dead bodies of their allies, closing the gap to the defense camp. It is almost where they were about to reach each other's shooting range.

"This is bad, the Claymore installed on the main street is decreasing."

"That Cavalry was a cannon fodder to open the path huh...!"

Before long, another wave of cavalry became the Claymore's prey, and explosions no longer occurs even after they dashed dozens of meters. The Claymore that was installed on the main street to restrict their movements had been depleted.

In a flash, the momentum of the Alwina troops increased quickly. Just as the heavy infantry Cavalry broke through the minefield, the heavily equipped foot soldiers started to ran at full speed too, and the area turned into a human tsunami. Their footsteps rumbled the ground. In fact, the vibration from ten thousand soldiers' footsteps reached the defensive encampment.

Karito's throat became parched from the excessive intensity. If it was not because of an order from Ordy to draw them closer, Karito might not have squeezed the trigger and stayed frozen.

"Fireeee!!!!!"

With the signal as the trigger, the spark for the gunfire has been made. Soldiers were pierced by arrows through the chest and magic cannons hit the land nearby making several infantries to flip into the air and scatter from the shockwave. Spears followed by, thrown by the beastman militia, it pierced through the soldiers successively.

The M240 which was lent by Karito in the middle of night, was fired by the human soldiers of this parallel world. The 7.62 mm NATO bullets were fired one after another, the empty cartridges flew into sky as it detached from the belt link.

As the tracer bullets were fired, it created a trail of light and charges with violent power as if sucked into the direction of the Alwina army. It is impossible to prevent

the high powered rifle bullets with only protective gears made from forged iron. The bullets easily pierced through the armors and stirred their internal organs, those hit by the bullet in the arms, legs, or bone had those parts cleanly torn off from their bodies

Karito also joined in with his MK48. It was a model based from a large caliber of the Minimi 5.56 mm light machine gun that was adopted by many countries such as the U.S.A and JSDF, and it also used a belt link of type 7.62 mm bullets system. It was installed with dot sight, foregrip, and a box magazine that can rapidly fire 200 magazines. In contrast to the soldiers who fired the M240 out of excitement, Karito fired continuously while making constant revision to his firing alignment.



In addition, there was also the sentry gun installed on the roof. The Sentry Gun of M2 heavy machine gun that fires 12.7 mm bullet were something that couldn't be compared with the infantry rifle bullets.



If it hits the head that is protected by helmet, it will be annihilated in the literal sense. Of course, other protective gears are also useless, if it hits the body, most of it will disappear, if it hits any limbs, it will be torn off. It goes without saying that losing a limbs is a fatal injury. Such bullets were pouring from sky and from the front, barraged by the rain of arrows, magic, spears and lead bullets.

When Ordy and the beastmen soldiers had used up all of the spare arrow and spears, they now began to throw the grenades left in a small mountain pile under their feet. Taught by Karito, they threw it at full power after removing the safety pins. On Earth, around 40~50 m was considered the limit, but the beastman could throw up to 100 m ahead easily.

———— A scene from hell continued for a while for the Alwina and Defense army.

As for the Alwina troops, when the Commander howled “advance!” with his long sword raised up, they were assaulted by unknown attacks completely different from the counters they tasted up till now as they witnessed their comrades falling one after the another. Furthermore, they were being shown the deaths of their comrades as they exploded into pieces of meat and fresh blood. As they were occasionally attacked by explosion from over their heads, many squatted down as they lost their fighting spirit and ended up dragging the following soldiers to trip here and there.

As for Karito’s group, looking at the situation where the Alwina army continued to push forward over the dead bodies of their fellows even after being shot again and again, was like a nightmare in a daylight. Fresh blood flowed from piles of corpses paved the main street red———— how many should they kill more until this nightmare ends?

Karito had already switched the magazine box, and it seemed like the 2nd box will be depleted soon. The remaining number of the M240 bullet must be below 100 shots. The barrel was already red hot from the rapid-firing, and the sandbag where the light machine gun was placed even had a burn mark. However, there was no sign of malfunction at all.

Then, the roof of the building where the sentry gun was installed was half destroyed by the magic shot from the Alwina army over the heads of the infantries. The Sentry gun was swallowed by the collapsing roof and became unusable. The installation point of the sentry gun must have been found out from the magnificent fire flames flight trajectory. As it continued, another Sentry gun was destroyed too.

As soon as the powerful gunfires from the fully mechanical automated heavy machine gun ceased, the intimidation for the defensive position doubled. Even though it depended on the angle of fire, the 12.7 mm that can pierce through several people with one shot had been destroyed.

It was time to change the situation, Ordy as commander decided, to retreat and raise the drawbridge and shift the war into holding onto the castle.

“Retreat to the headquarters!”

As though they anticipated it, the other soldiers began to withdraw from the defense camp quickly. Karito also nodded and switched the weapon on his hands to a HK416 with a Grenade Launcher. The M320 grenade launcher was loaded with smoke bombs.
[TL: the M320 grenade launcher here is installed to HK416]

After firing at the tip of the approaching Alwina army to conceal themselves, Karito also crossed the drawbridge. The castle gate mechanism device began to close at the same time he passed through the castle gate. It was a two level protection as the castle gate part were made to close too when the drawbridge was fully raised.

Looking back at defensive encampment on the other side of closing castle gate, the Alwina troops who broke through the smoke curtain had arrived one after another into the defensive camp. They were approaching with bloodshot eyes to take over the castle gate before the drawbridge had been raised completely.

Like magic, the HK416 which he held was replaced with another object. It had a shape like large palm sized clothespin

He stretched out the hand which held the object straight towards the castle gate, and just before the castle gate closed, he strongly gripped it.

...At the next moment, C4 (plastic bomb) explosives placed in several building around the defensive camp exploded along with Alwina Soldiers.

Karito's group climbed up the interior stairs that was prepared beforehand to the upper parts of the castle.

The defensive camp had completely disappeared due to the explosion that occurred on both sides. The same was for the buildings where C4 was installed, even a small crater was formed in respect to the center of the blast.

The damage on Alwina side was enormous, as their flow temporarily stagnated in attempt to climb over the defensive camp, many infantries gathered, at least hundreds of people had been transformed into dismembered bodies which no longer resembles

human figures at all. Bodies were minced into pieces by exploding building fragments, their internal organs were destroyed from the shock wave that penetrated inside the body and blood was flowing out from every hole.

Still, the Alwina troops continued fighting. As soon as they thought that the enemy had abandoned the defensive camp and even holed inside the headquarters which was their last stronghold, they were convinced that they will achieve victory had they broke through here and the Alwina army regained their morale once again. The cavalry dismounted their horses, turned into infantries, and joined the siege attack the archers and magicians fired from the infantry's rear.

“All members prepare!”

Inside the fortress, the Defense Force Commander Minotauros gave orders to the soldiers. Not only for the soldiers, even male refugees who were participating in the battles. Their hands trembled as they held swords, spears, and large stones to throw down from above. Some people were also stirring boiling oil inside a cauldron.

The depth of the dry moat surrounding the headquarters was 2 m deep and 10 m wide. The soldiers who raised ladders, surged in to climb over the castle walls.

Under the sound of their thundering footsteps, the faint sounds of metallic safety devices being disarmed were erased.

As soon as one infantry who aimed into the castle stepped down into the bottom of the moat, suddenly, flat objects jumped out of the ground. There were some who stopped in their tracks surprised, but there were also those who went past through it without noticing.

It is not of a one or two in number. As the large army escaped from the narrow street, they advanced forward while spreading sideways in order to siege the fortress. The infantries who stepped down into the dry moat were blocked by dozens of bouncing bettys which were triggered almost simultaneously.

Likewise, the climax of a fireworks display, the landmine bodies launched into the air as high as the soldiers' line of vision and exploded consecutively. There is no way a human being can live through an explosion that happened right in front of their nose. More than 100 infantries who charged mindlessly in the first wave of the siege attack, had their whole body torn into fragments separating their necks and their lower parts.

After being caught by traps they had never seen before on the dry moat, the movement of the infantries were slightly delayed.

The Minotaur Commander who saw the scene, gave a signal that rivaled the sound of the Alwina army's footsteps advance.

"Now, Release it!!!!"

The Defense Force who had been driven into a corner had prepared a special "welcome" gift for their invaders, and showered it over the invading infantries' heads.

-----Now, the Citadel is reaching it final stages of the war.

CHAPTER 15

ALAMO (2)

“Arggh, you still can’t capture it yet!!?”

A scene was happening aaround the entrance of the town, inside the double layer wall surrounding the entire Citadel.

Borrowing an inn that relatively has the least damage from the rather large war, a temporary strategy headquarters was established in the first floor which also serves as a bar. The ‘current’ Supreme Commander of the Alwina invasion army roared to the surrounding people.

“Su, Supreme Commander. We are already at our limits. Since they have raised the drawbridge, we could no longer use the battering ram to attack the sealed castle gate, and we have already lost more than half of the soldiers we brought!”

“What about that! We must completely control this city by the end of today or our lives will be forfeited!? Can you bastards do that!?”

The Supreme Commander glared at one of the staff officer giving advice with bloodshot eyes. The staff officer raised his voice unyieldingly, opposing his superior who was one step into madness from excessive self protection.

“We have already been in a state of destruction since a long time ago! I can no longer approve to waste the soldiers scattered like this!”

“Shouldn’t we be able to gather hoodlums and mercenaries with money like the soldiers?”

“With such devastation spreading out, there is no way we can gather them anymore next time!”

“Then you can go and tell the remaining soldiers that they will be given whatever they wish for if they manage to make an achievement!”

“Re, Reporting! Some mercenaries have started to retreat without orders, and other soldiers are gradually agreeing with them too. It’s making our battle situation disordered!!”

Hearing the report of the messenger, the face of the staff officer became stiff, pointing while saying, “See what you have done!”

It is all thanks to the brainwashing work and publication to the citizens of how their country has been oppressed by neighboring countries that worked together with the demi-humans, that they have barely managed avoiding a total collapse after suffering such a blow.

However, it is now reaching the limit.

“Supreme commander! Please make a decision! If you keep sacrificing like this, the result will go beyond just losing. It will taint the honour and pride of the Alwina Kingdom Soldiers too!”

“Shut up! Don’t say anything anymore! If you say any insolent words a second longer, I will kill you with my own hands!”

The Supreme Commander’s face distorted like a mad beast as he placed his hand on the sword hanging on his waist.

The staff officer also reached out to his sword too. The room soon filled with blood lust.

———— A sword was drawn in a flash.

It was neither the Supreme Commander nor the staff officer though both wielded a sword. Then... the Supreme Commander changed into the “Former” Supreme Commander.

With *Flop*, the head of the Supreme Commander, still filled with a frozen look, fell down from his body. The part from the neck downwards also fell in suit the following second.

Somehow, blood didn't spurt out from the place where it was severed. The place where it was cut looked like black burned from a laser, completely blocking the blood vessel

that has been cut.

The one who swung the sword was a red hair female knight wearing a silver steel armor made from mithril. ——— Hilda snorted slightly as she sheathed her beloved sword adorned with jewels back into the scabbard.

She gave a scornful sneer looking at the unsightly Supreme Commander.

“To think that ‘this guy’ is so incompetent to this degree.”



Her voice was as clear as bells made from delicate glasses, a voice that possessed both coldness and a clear tone.

“I will head out to lead the soldiers. Tell the surviving magicians on the front lines to release all their remaining magical power together in order to support us.”

“Un, understood!”



“Damnit! There is really a lot of them!”

While he slipped curses like a genetically modified human with dark skin light haired MS pilot from elsewhere, Karito lowered himself into the protection of the shielding walls while changing magazines for the nth time.

As soon as he once again got up while equipped with the HK41, a stray arrow passed right in front of his eyes. Even though the arrow just brushed through him, it was still bad for the heart. The sounds of his disarrayed breathing echoed behind the mask covering his mouth, hurting his own ears.

While defending the defense camp, Karito was protected by a special goggle, camouflaged clothes, and a tactical armor with a bulletproof plate just like the one commonly used by modern infantry on earth. So the appearance that he took after moving into the castle walls from the war field changed drastically.

The helmet design resembled the German army from the third imperial period. The goggles itself didn't have any difference in its performance, but merely looks like an old-fashioned night vision goggles with a gas mask covering the bottom half of the face. From the neck below, even if it was not as thick as the <Juggernaut>, a full metallic armor covered his body. The shoulder pads that protected both shoulders protruded greatly like the protector for American Football.

The armor which Karito was now wearing is usually called <Protection Gear>. Although there was another official name for it, among the <WBGO> players, this <Protection Gear> looks like an armor used by the security forces that appeared in a certain work among the clan called mercenary forces formed by the players that gather armor and weapon from the German world war 2 period. (especially MG42 is on the top of the list)

Because the Armor function corresponds to its performance, it was also popular to those people aside from the maniac players.

Each reinforced part of the protector has an overall reduction in damages caused by rifle bullets and explosives, and it also disables damage caused by handgun bullets. The gask mask, helmet, and etc, also nullifies damages from poison gasses, flame damage, and flash echoes. To finish, each part has an assist function to strengthen the physical strength of the user.

If <Juggernaut> is an equipment that turns the wearer to an invincible human fortress, then the <Protection Gear> is an equipment that raises the ability of the wearer.

From a glance, what Karito wished was a combined armor that can easily repel arrows and improve movement speed. However, finding that balance seemed to be difficult. Nevertheless, Karito's current circumstance was also pressing, and he needs to travel frequently along the top of the walls. A place where arrows and magic flew around.

Right in front of Karito, another new Ladder (refers to long ladder, not the one that is used as a plaything at the park) was being raised. The Alwina soldiers climbed excitedly as they looked up through their helmets. Karito ran over to them in no time and hit them with the telescopic stock of the rifle. The Alwina soldier screamed and fell while scattering his broken teeth and fresh blood. Such scenes were happening in several places at the same time.

One after another, he kicked off the ladders forward. The ladders collapsed on the other side of the wall and disappeared from sight. From the spot where the ladder was propped on, Karito stepped out and fired the HK416.

At a different place, Ordy too was kicking Ladders along with the Alwina soldiers that were climbing it. The Dwarves from the volunteer army used hammers to crush the enemies together with the ladders. The Centaur commander, using arrows in place for short spears, pierced the Alwina soldiers that were about to reach the top of the walls before beating them up.

The remaining small number of magicians fired their magic canons towards the nearby buildings where the enemy's archer troops were, blowing them away together with the building. One worthy detail to be specially noted was the reinforcements given by Marian who took a position on the top of the headquarters. She had been

releasing numerous light bullets rivalling the power of an air explosive cluster bomb, raining those above the heads of the Alwina army which exploded in a chain reaction, tearing their bodies into flesh.

Although bringing the battle onto the castle walls brought a lot of damage to the Alwina army, it had also scraped the remaining Defense Forces. It brought especially much damages to those refugees that temporarily joined.

They did not have complete armor and their movements were bad since they were amateurs. When they failed to cope with the shooting sequence, many were shot by arrows, and got tangled in the magic's aftermath. The fired magic which occasionally jumped over the castle walls and landed on the building or barracks in the back turned scattered debris as weapons and attacked them from behind, it was dreadful.

Still, they continued throwing big and small heavy stones and poured boiled oil towards the Alwina soldiers that gathered in the moat around the wall.

"Geez, there is no end to this!!"

He roared wildly as he fired the remaining bullets of the HK416 over the heads of the Alwina army. Karito was overwhelmed by the illusion that the number of enemy soldiers were not decreasing no matter how much he shot at them. They need to run left and right repelling the enemy soldiers that kept on climbing the ladders trying to breakthrough the walls.

Karito was about to hit the limit of his patience. Firing lead bullets from the top had become a dull thing.

He switched his equipment. The assault rifle made in Germany disappeared into a thin air and the weapon he selected appeared on his arms. The added weight sat on Karito's back heavily.

The hose extended from the cylinder on the back, attached to it it is a pipe grip trigger.

With the sound of clickings, fires seed flickered at the tip of the thick pipe.

What is the identity of this weapon? If there is any calm spectator who understood the context of that place, his face would be in a grimace just by imagining the scenes that will occur the next moment.

Putting up one foot on something like a handrail to prevent falling from the top of walls, Karito pointed his weapon ——— a Flamethrower towards the Alwina Soldiers. He pulled the trigger and released the valve. The high pressured released fuels and fire seeds went through the process of ignition and produced a flame that showered the Alwina army from above their heads.

The range of the flamethrower is about 30 to 40 m. Even though the range is far from comparison with an assault rifle, it is possible to burn off anything within its range beyond what a single bullet with a diameter less than 1 cm can do.

It is particularly effective in enclosed areas. Even the actual battles in the <WBGO> boasted of its unrivaled strength against indoor warfares. Not to mention that it can burn the enemies to death using fire, causing death from poisonous gas and oxygen deficiency is also possible. As the effect of this function can affect all players. Even within the <WBGO>, it was deadly to the point that the users themselves have to be equipped with counter flames and poisonous gas functions.

The effect was dramatic. The fire whip licked over the Alwina army, and in a flash, battle cries were utterly transformed into screams of death.

Once swallowed by the flame, any armour did not stand a chance, everyone burned equally and wilted away. The fuel penetrated through the gaps between their armors, burning furiously. Even with full face helmet, the result would just be the same thing. Even though the flame will not burn into the trachea, they cannot avoid the poisonous gas unless they had a gas mask like the one Karito was equipped.

The worst misfortune that had befallen onto the Alwina soldiers was that the attempt to capture the Defense Force, which had shut themselves into the headquarters, the area around the castle walls and gate became overcrowded. The fire burned the surrounding people and the damages even spread further.

When the first fire ended, Karito immediately moved to another point of the castle walls and fired another shower of flames again. Screams ensued further. The smell of fuel and the black smoke coming from the burning of human flesh shrouded the vicinity of the wall. Although they were enemies, but seeing a human being roasted alive strained the refugees and a few soldiers to throw up. The surviving veteran soldiers did not blame them for it this time.

From Karito's perspective, he only had a little consciousness over the shocking act. Perhaps when he would remember this moment some time later after the war has ended, he may finally understand the meaning of his own conduct...

There is no doubt that that moment will come, but at least not now.

Not only the side of the Defense Force, but even the Alwina army was stunned witnessing the sight of their allies burning and dying. Before long, the soldiers tried to escape from the flames and black smoke, they clashed into each other and panic spread. Some soldiers who tried to secretly escape from the crowded main street, went towards the alleys and fell victim to the landmines instead.

Having suffered a great deal of damage so far with the push of this havoc. the Alwina invasion troops began to utterly collapse this time.

At that very moment when everyone on the castle walls were frozen while witnessing the terrible sight.

On the other side of the thickening black smoke which have started to block the field of vision, a flicker of light suddenly flashed. When it entered into his sight, Ordy instantly grasped the meaning of this phenomenon and simultaneously issued a brace warning.

"Magic attack incoming!!"

Not many could react immediately. Magic attack flew through the black smoke and landed on each part of the castle walls. Although the thick wall would never collapse, damages were caused from the scattering fragment while few were blown off by direct hits from fireballs.

Some soldiers had lost their footing and fell down the walls from the shock impact. Several shots had also landed on the headquarters and barracks, opening large holes on it.

——— When they had noticed, a new silhouette appeared on top of the castle walls.

Several shadows passed through the sky and a *neighing* sound reached the ears. When they had realize it, the Sky Cavalry had already crossed over via the sky and jumped down from it.

The newcomers who came in such a bold way were knights equipped with shining silver whole armor plates.

“You bas———!”

The head of the Defense Force soldier was cut by a long sword before he can finish his sentence. With that as a start, a melee fight broke out on top of the castle walls.

The newcomers were about 10 people in total. Nevertheless, the damage kept increasing in a blink of eye. Not only were their skills uncomparable against the normal soldiers, above all, they have absurd physical abilities. It is because they were using strengthening magic from the thin film of light which covered their body. The figures that wore silver armors moved with a speed that only left an afterimage reminding people of white shining shells.

When the black smoke from the flamethrower cleared up, the surviving Alwina army that had gathered outside of castle walls cheered when they saw that fight.

“That’s the silver corps! They are the Alwina Royal Guards!”

Ordy growled in annoyance when their identities were revealed. It can be seen from their trademark mithril steel armors they wore.

Mithril steel is the strongest metal in this world. Armors made from mithril steel will not be dented even by a blow from an Orc’s big axe. Regarding its magic defense, it can repel magic shots easily. Because of its rareness, war equipments made from mithril steel could almost not be seen in the market.

The Silver corps is a group of knights that has both the ability and devotion to the country to be given such items. One needs to have accumulated a lot of military exploitation in numerous battlefields to achieve this. Their captain is a beautiful female knight that has gathered them with her reputation alone. However, she is nothing more than a dreadful existence for Belkania and the surrounding countries.

The doubled-edge swords that they wield were famous for their sharpness or were either due to the body strengthening magic so they were able to slice off the body of the Defense force soldier in a single blow regardless be they human or beastmen. The top of the castle walls were quickly dyed in fresh blood.

“What the hell are they!!”

As the fight had fallen into confusion discerning allies or enemies, in this situation, he can no longer use the flamethrower anymore ———

Canceling the flamethrower, he clenched his side weapon the Desert Eagle. At the same time, the knights of the Silver corps set Karito as their new prey after they had slashed the beastman soldiers along with their steel breastplates.

He didn't even have the time to aim with both hands. With a gap less than 5 meters, Karito only had the chance to shoot twice from his waist like those scenes from the western gunman play before a knight had already closed in a single breadth.

Even so, it should have been more than enough. Despite using 7.62 mm x 39 (the former is the diameter of the bullet itself, while the later indicates the length of cartridge that is loaded with gunpowder) AK47 bullets for handguns, it has the power comparable with .50 AE rifle bullets. It has also been modified to increase its charge with heavy explosion like armor-piercing bullets. However, only a small dent the size of a big thumb remained on the silver breastplate.

As the shock passes through, the knight with the full body armor was pushed back and had to stop his movements. He placed his hand in pain on the part of the chest that was shot, and even so he advanced again to attack Karito.

“UOOOOO!!”

Bang *Bang* *Bang*

The Desert Eagle roared. This time he aimed it at the head that was covered by a full helmet. Fire sparks scattered on the surface as the head of the knight shook as if beaten by an invisible bat.

With his long sword still raised over his head, the knight fell down frontwards and stayed silent. The impact from the shock transmitted through the helmet passed through and reached his semicircular canal and brain, making him lost his consciousness.

“That scared ———”

An impact came from the back. This time, it was Karito who felt the pain of being hit by a bat violently. It felt like something struck diagonally down on his left shoulder. While feeling numb on his left arms, he turned the other way and saw what was happening before he collapsed from the impact. Another figure of the Silver corps member poised with his sword raised high, swung it down.

Had Karito not been equipped with the <Protection Gear> armor, he would have been killed by that sword swing just now. While the fear of death filled his mind, his body moved as if manipulated by another person. He counterattacked by firing bullets while his back hit the stone floor.

He aimed towards a small target which was the head, but the bullets merely scratched the helmet's surface. The knight ignored his attempt to stop the attack. Karito raised his foot protector and kicked the knight's breastplate with his soles, pushing him back as much as possible. The knight stumbled backwards. After regaining his balance, he proceeds to attack Karito again with his sword.

Boom

——— The body of the knight was abruptly knocked to the side. Like a doll thrown by children, the knight fell outside the castle walls.

It was done by a full swing from a Dwarf's hammer. Humans do fall to the ground vertically was an inappropriate impression that passed by Karito's mind.

“Are you okay? When dealing with such opponents, you need to knock them out first to defeat them!”

“Th, thank you...”

The Dwarf gave a hand to Karito while shouldering a huge hammer that was taller than his body. His loud voice reverberated into Karito's ears despite having equipped a protective helmet.

As Karito was lifted easily by that stout hand ——— he could see something behind the Dwarf. A shadow was approaching quietly from the sky

The real nature of the shadow was... a griffon rider that stuck his hands out to gather light towards the two of them.

“Watch out!”

As soon as he said that, grasping at the hands that was extended, he thrust the Dwarf’s short body that was like a child with a full beard, scooped him up, and jumped down inside the castle walls.

After a momentary fleeting feeling, a shock wave hit the back of the two as they fell down pulled by gravity. They had nearly lost their balance in the air, but they were able to endure it somehow and landed on the ground with their feet. After landing, they rolled forwards to reduce the impact. The height of the wall was the same as a three story building, however, since both of them possessed high physical abilities, they did not suffer any major injuries.

“You have saved my life there. I appreciate it.”

“Please don’t mind it, it is mutual.”

Suddenly, an explosion came from the top. The origin of the explosion was the roof of the headquarters. Following after was a scream from the same area. As Karito turned away from the Dwarf, a corpse of a soldier assigned to guard Marian fell down from the rooftop.

Looking at the dead body that fell right in front them as it made an unpleasant crushing noise, a scar, as if burned by a laser, was carved on the body together with the armor. They can hear sounds of battle beginning inside the headquarters.

“It seems like the headquarters has been invaded from the sky. Sorry but please go back and support the headquarters, leave the other side of the wall to us!”

“I understand, Thank you!”

The two of them parted. Reloading the magazine of the desert eagle, Karito headed towards the headquarters.

His aim is the battle on the rooftop and the top most floor.

CHAPTER 16

ALAMO (3)

The sound of hard boots hitting the stone staircase on a fast tempo echoed through the surroundings.

As he continued to climb the stairs, he scanned inside the building. As expected, the battle seemed to be taking place on the 6th floor, the highest floor. As things turned into an all-out war, all hands have been mobilized for their fighting power. Besides from the refugees underground, those that were remained in the headquarters were the Commander Class officers, the messengers, and a minimum amount of guards. And that “minimum” amount of soldiers might already be corpses by now.

At least, Marian the magician who stayed within the castle walls can still be counted as an ally. But, the magicians in charge of defending the fort were typically weak when it comes to close combat———Karito had a bad feeling.

When he reached the 6th floor, for some reason, the wind blowing inside the building was mixed with dust. The reason lies in the large hole that was made in the middle of the ceiling.

“Are you serious?”

The condition looked like the after effects of a C4 explosion. Well, even though he often saw scenes of it in the <WBGO> where new entrances were blasted open with explosives, but even so.

Where pieces from the ceiling were scattered, he can hear clashing sounds and people arguing from the depths of the corridor. Karito readied himself to fire his AA-12 at any time.

This time, it was not loaded with the double 00 buck bullet nor the small sized Frag-12 highly explosive shell, but it was loaded with slag bullets meant for large animals. Even though its penetration power can not compare to a military rifle, but it fires out a large amount of bullets the size of a big thumb, its power is quite dreadful.

Listening to the Dwarf's advice, he changed his plan. Instead of trying to pierce the Mythrill armor, he decided to knock the equipped person with shock impact. It is similar to why special forces consider not only assault rifles, but also large caliber pistols and submachine guns as countermeasures against criminals with bulletproof clothes. If Karito is to compete using a rifle, even a 7.62 mm armor piercing bullet couldn't penetrate it. There is a high possibility that he would end up to change the rifle again. Thus, the choice of a shotgun seemed to be more plausible in this case, Karito judged based on a real life combat experience.

There were several doors on both sides of the corridor. The invading enemies might be hiding in one of these doors, or it can be where Defense Force soldiers are hiding.

In such time, it is best to do a scan. When the scanning started, the field of view through Karito's goggles emitted a wave of light that spread around him like a submarine sending an active sonar.

“(——— There.)”

A person was hiding behind the door that was 2 doors away. In a large room at the end of the corridor, he saw the silhouette of four people. Two of them were lying down, and another with sword is fighting with another person with a cane. The one with a cane might be the magician Marian.

For the time being, the person hiding in the nearby room is the problem. From the silhouette he saw, it was clearly a completely armed soldier. The problem is that whether he was an Alwina soldier or a Defense Force soldier.

Deep inside the room, in the conference room, he can see Marian being pushed around by the swordsman. He can't waste any time, he needs to support her quickly.

“I'm sorry if I made a mistake!”

He tilted it upwards and fired towards the door. Stirred from the shock wave, dust flew up in the air and scattered near the muzzle. The person was ———

“Bingo!”

It was an enemy. He must have been there to ambush reinforcements moving towards the conference room. It was one of the knights equipped with silver body armor like

those he fought on the walls. The slug bullets tore through parts of the wooden door and revealed his appearance.

Because he was on guard, he sent another counter attack bullet in a flash. The distance between him and enemy was about 5 m. He aimed properly, there was no way to miss it. Sure enough, Karito hit the armor right in front of him.

Back when he fired all the bullets in his desert eagle, it was only enough to make the enemy stagger. But as soon as the slug bullet hit, the knight's body made a half turn. His feet left the floor and he fell on his back as he made a noisy sound. When he hit the floor, a sound of violent wet coughing echoed from the enemy's helmet. His internal organs might be injured from the shock blows he received just now.

It was expected from the slug bullets. While admiring it, Karito fired another shot to the helmet's side. With this he will surely faint from a cerebral concussion, however, it would not be weird if he were to die from the cerebral contusion.

Karito dashed until he reached the meeting room. Without slowing down before the door, he used his right leg to kick on the doorknob of the double door to open it. The heavy door immediately opened into the conference room's side.

——— Just at that moment, Karito saw Marian's right arm sliced cut off.

Still holding the cane, Marian's right arm whirled through the empty space and slumped to the floor.

The cane fell together with her severed right arm. When the right arm separated itself from the woman magician, it bounced a little bit and at the next moment, no trace of flesh was left. It only left behind a small pile of ashes. The cane that was released from the fingers' grip rolled away.

Marian simply showed an expression of annoyance with the loss of her arm. It did not look like she was suffering from pain either. As Karito looked closely, there was no bleeding from the part where the right arm was cut. It reminded Karito of their first meeting where she said, "I can't feel pain as no blood flows."

The knight that took her arms was also a woman. Unlike other knights from the Silver Corps, this female knight was only equipped with a breastplate, a shoulder pad, knuckle pads, and a foot protector. It was the type of armor that only protects the vital

areas. Those too, gave a shine characteristically that of mithril steel. From the helmet, a lock of fiery red hair like fire can be seen coming out from its hiding place.

The female knight was an exceptional beauty. The reason why he knew that was because she was wearing a great helmet type. No part of the armor hid her face and this secured her a wider view. Her face turned towards Karito who had just arrived.

“Not Good!!”

“Karito!?”

Ignoring the surprised voice of Marian that recognized the person who rushed over to her, Karito dodged sideways. The female knight wielded her sword and a fireball the size of basketball suddenly appeared in empty space and hit the door that Karito had kicked moments before. It exploded, fire scattered and a heat wave stretched throughout the corridor.

As he was trying to recall what had just happened, the next moment, the female knight plunged towards Karito’s chest. Karito could not manage to evade it. He can see the sword arc clearly. The course of the arc leads towards his body. Will he be cut into two?

As the female’s long sword swung down like a guillotine, simultaneously, Marian shot an arrow of light from her remaining left hand.

What Marian released was a Magic Lancer, a variation of the Magic Canon where it is specialized in penetrating the target instead of exploding on contact. If Magic Canon is equal to a grenade, then Magic Lancer can be regarded as an armor piercing bullet. Karito thought so as a Magic Canon might get him involved in the damage.

The female knight got hit by the magic bullet on her back and she lost her balance. Because of that, the sword’s trajectory shifted forward and landed on the wall behind Karito... Even though the momentum was decreasing, the sharp edge of the sword was covered with a thin light film as it tore the stone wall just like butter cut by a heated knife.

Karito gained a few precious seconds, and he instinctively moved his body to grasp on the hope of life.

He grabbed the AA-12 with both hands and raised the stock in reverse motion. The

sword's guard where a jewel was embedded, collided with the stock, and both of them struggled for domination against each other for a short time. Karito was able to successfully escape from the female knight's sword as he stretched his body forward sideways, escaping through her side before her sword could hit. He slid down next to Marian and reorganized his position.

"Ahh... I thought I am going to die."

"That voice, it is Karito after all. I am not able to sense you at all so it is hard to figure it out."

"Rather than that, your arm, is your arm alright!?"

"Don't worry. Even if I lose one or two arms, I will not die. After all, I am already dead."

Marian who had grasped Karito's position relying on his voice, gave a faint mischievous smile. The hood part which hid her face when they first met was already torn, unable to fulfill its functions anymore. The robe that was embroidered with gold thread had also been torn here and there.

After looking at Karito, her sights returned to the female knight—— Hilda, and her expression tightened again.

"That spirit sword just now, and this strong spirit emitted from the armor you're wearing, could you be Hilda the [Flame Sword] leader of the Silver corps?"

"And you must be the [Black Immortal] Marian Engelhardt——— Today you will turn into ash and dispersed by my flame."

"Thanks to you, one of my arms have already been slashed and turned into ash."

"Then I will cut that head of yours next."

"I would like to excuse myself from that. Karito be careful, her spirit sword can burn every object it touches!"

"Seriously?"

The spirit sword refers to a sword where spirit power was concentrated to increase

the sharpness of the sword through spirit magic. With Hilda being a top-class magician, her sword is equivalent to a large number of compressed spirits, resulting for the blade to look like a laser blade.

Her spirit sword interfered with the power of spirit contained in every substance, that was why when she slashes on something, it will leave a burned mark as if cut by laser. Therefore it was named [Flame Sword].

If there is something she can't cut, it would be the mithril armor she and her subordinates wore and the magic barrier that surrounded the barrack casted by a top-class magician like Marian.

In addition to the spirit sword, she practiced swordsmanship and enhanced physical ability by spirit magic and strengthening magic was something that shouldn't be taken lightly of. Her beloved sword also functioned as a wand of a magician.

"There is no use to restrain against those who sides with demi-humans. I will cut and burn that man together with you!"

"Just who on earth will just say [oh, yes please] and stay quiet!"

The AA-12 roared. It spits out slug bullets at the rate of 350 rounds per minute. Hilda avoided it at a speed that only left behind afterimages. Numerous holes the size of a fist pierced the stone wall behind her back.

But, none of it hit her. Hilda moved left and right irregularly, her movements were too fast. His aim can't catch up with her. Her speed was like a supersonic fighter aircraft that also moved around like a UFO.

When he had noticed it, she had already arrived near his torso again. But this time, Marian's hemispherical magic barrier hindered the predicted slash. Karito aimed again at the place where she stopped and shot. She dodged this too. The opponent was able to move around the conference room freely within the surrounding walls as long as there is enough space to move in, making it hard to engage attacks.

Considering that Hilda was not equipped with a defense like other Silver Corps soldiers, Karito wanted to switch the slug bullets into the 00 bullets immediately, but he does not want to create chances that will expose himself. Sooner or later his magazine bullets will run out, and the AA-12 is too big, making it hard to handle. He would like to switch into a handgun or at least a small submachine gun.

“This is my first time to use this kind of weapon, even though it is powerful, it can only can shoot in a straight line. It is no different than an arrow. It is too easy to avoid its line of fire!”

“Then how about this!”

Marian made a complex gestures with her fingertips. The flames burning around the door increases in intensity before turning into a number of flame snakes and rushed to attack Hilda.

“Only this?”

The white blade flashed in high speed and repelled all the flame snakes. At that moment, Karito aimed attempting to shoot once again. However, with her right hand grasping the sword, Hilda fired fireball towards Karito and Marian with her left hand.

It struck the magic barrier that Marian erected and the flames scattered around them, forming a flame wall between the two and Hilda. They were not able to grasp the situation on the other side because of the wall of fire. Where had Hilda gone to?

“Behind!”

Marian who can perceive spirits encompassing every existence of this world with her pseudo-visual and not her naked eyes, was able to notice that Hilda went around their backs earlier and issued a warning. Still, Karito’s reaction was too slow.

As he tried to turn the AA-12, he was assaulted by a strong impact. The next moment, both of his legs had already left the floor before he realized it. With a half-flipped posture, he flew several meters afloat from the floor as if pulled by an invisible wire before crashing down on his left shoulder into a large table where the topography map lies.

“Kuh, ghaa, this!!?”

The momentum did not stop, it was only after he bounced and slid off the edge of the topographic map and fell crashing into the floor that he finally stopped. His chest, shoulder, and back hurt, but the most painful was his chest. Breathing felt painful.

Unable to writhe in pain, Karito teared up inside his gas mask and goggles moving only his neck to look down at his chest. He can see the horrible scar of blade carved deeply into his full automatic shotgun. It was slashed down right into the engine section rendering it completely useless. The gun had become his shield.

Nevertheless, he could feel the impact through the armor. It felt like he was hit by a hammer swung by a gorilla. His breath came out rough and short. Unable to bear it, he took off his gas mask.

Hilda scrunched her beautiful eyebrows as she drew a clean arc aiming the tip of her long blade towards Marian. She sensed the presence of Karito's survival, he was still breathing heavily after receiving a full blown damage of the attack.

Why hasn't that man died yet?

Even though all the enemies that received her spirit sword so far could be shielded or protected by armors, however, all of them were equally cut down by the magic encompassing the sword. If there was any armor that can receive her sword fair and square, it will be no other than Mithril steel armour. At least that was what she expected until now.

How can her enemy still survive even after receiving her spirit sword? It felt like the spirit sword's power was not able to pass through at all and that only a longsword steel made contact.

Even though she cannot feel any spirit from the weapons and armors from that man————

“(Wait, I cannot feel any spirit at all?)”

Although he was hidden behind the topographic map and couldn't see anything, he can hear the sounds of Hilda's spirit sword colliding with Marian's defense. Even though he wanted to return back to the fight, but having received severe damage from the impact, his body would not listen to his commands.

“(I can't win if I only charge from the front)”

Their abilities were too different. Even without the spirit magic to reinforce her body, Karito was forced to realize their gaps that is like heaven and earth between their

skills.

Then how could he fill that gap?

“(It’s a weapon)”

The thing that the opponent does not have but he does ——— a wide variety of modern firearms.

Which weapon will be the most effective in this moment.

“Maybe this one...!”

Originally, Karito have added this into his equipment list in order to use it in cases where the fort was breached and fights occurred inside the building. Because his left shoulder felt numb and wouldn’t move as he wishes, he bit the safety ring part with his teeth and pulled it out.

The safety lever bounced in response from the loss of the safety pin. He tried to stand while desperately enduring the screams from his breastbone and ribs injuries, and threw [that] under the shadow of the topographic map, igniting it.

While pressing her shining long sword to break Marian ‘s barrier, Hilda was alarmed by the object rolling at her feet and quickly took a distance from Marian. She had also created a magic barrier and took defensive posture. Marian maintained the barrier without knowing what has been thrown when she heard something rolling.

The object that Karito threw was———— a flash grenade. Then, the grenade exploded.

In an instant, intense light flashed and a tremendous roaring sound louder than the sound of a shotgun and rifle echoed in the room. The window glass which survived the aftermath of the battle inside and outside, now shattered outwards from the loud noise.

Before the flash faded away, Karito who had the protection for both visual and hearing from the goggles and helmet, stood up. Supported by the edge of the topographic map, he aimed the desert eagle with only his right hand onto Hilda whose movements were temporarily frozen.

As expected, Hilda's posture changed as she covered her eyes with both of her hands. Because of the loud noise affecting her sense of hearing and semicircular canals, her footing became unsteady. Still, her longsword was still dangerous as long as she was still holding it.

Karito jumped out from behind the topographic map and shoot while shortening the distance. He did not stop with just one shot, he fired all the bullets loaded into the magazine and continued with this momentum.

Hands, chest, shoulder and concentrating around the upper body, Karito's bullets made contact one after another. But she did not let go the sword even when the bullets hit the back of her hand.

But to perform a harmful act by shooting a.50 caliber with one hand when his mind and body were in distress with severe pain, unluckily, all hits landed on areas protected by the mithril armor. Since it has come to this, he thought of trusting the muzzle into her mouth and shoot it, and for that, he would need to shorten the distance even further.

While bearing the damages penetrating through her armor, Hilda avoided fatal injuries and now began to counterattack. Even though her eyesight hasn't fully recovered yet, she moved based on a warrior's instinct and her enemy's fighting spirit.

"Your acts are only of this small degree!!!"

"Gahhh!?"

She swooped down aiming for his neck. Although the sword attacks up till now moved in a speed that couldn't be tracked by Karito's eyes, however, probably due to the accumulated internal damage, he was barely able to react to this blow. He gripped the desert eagle and thrust the bottom onto the slash trajectory.

Even though he had prepared for it, he still felt a considerable impact from the hit. The blade slammed into the extended magazine that is longer than the body of the handgun grip and Karito's body flew again. He was once again struck against the wall hitting his left shoulder first. With a cracking sound, a cobweb-like crack occurred on the wall where he crashed.

Had the position slipped by a little bit, he might have been rolling down from the

window that had lost its glass.

“This is the end!!”

Moving at the same speed as a bullet, she focused her magic power on the tip of her sword and thrust her whole body forward to release it.

She intended to pierce through Karito, penetrating the walls behind him. Her aim was his heart.

He could not escape due to the damage which has reached his feet... the moment he thought so, his knees suddenly lost its strength. His knees bent itself, just right around the height where his face will be facing the tip of the approaching blade.

He turned his face away from fear of the approaching sharp point of sword.

With the accelerating speed added with the thrust from her whole body behind the piercing strike, it penetrated through a space only 3 mm away from Karito's nose. The sword penetrated the wall without decreasing its momentum. And the released magic power concentrated on the sword tip released its destructive power.

The wall reached its limit and a large hole was formed from the explosion. Hilda who went flying to thrust the move, collided head-on with Karito as it is.

—— Karito's and Hilda's body were thrown out from the 6th floor into the empty sky.

After feeling the instantaneous floating, they fell down like the feeling of being knocked down to the abyss. That too did not last long. The impact was not something that can be compared to, and it was followed by a sound of someone being crushed.

And everything turned into darkness.

When he regained consciousness, his whole back felt like it was being buried by something.

He felt a drum was beating next to his ear, his heart was pounding intensely, and his vision filled with red filter. In the <WBGO>, this indicates critical condition. In the game there was no pain felt, but this is reality.

While his whole body seemed to scream in pain and was about to fall apart, his hand spontaneously took out syringes containing recovery medicines from the accessories list. He placed his hand in front of his neck and drove it into the nape of his neck, the pain quickly disappeared, and his heartbeat and breathing began to calm down.

At the moment when he was forced to crash down from the conference room, he had no composure to judge where he would be falling into. The place where Karito fell was a wagon which was just under the conference room. By the way, the wagon was a relatively large one, that were sent as reinforcement from the Royal Capital.

Disregarding whichever had a more concrete effect, perhaps the wagon acted as shock break from the fall in exchange for it turning into wreck. It would also seem to be the defensive effect of the armor were taking effect, so he did not have to die at least for the time being.

He stood up while removing pieces of wood from his body. He tried to ascertain the condition of that woman that fell down together with him. It was in that moment as he was about to reload and pulls out the damaged magazine from the grip that he had kept clenching in his fall.

Hilda suddenly appeared out of nowhere and overwhelmed Karito. On a horse riding posture, the only hand which was covered by a hand plate covered Karito's mouth while the other one pressed down on Karito's neck. The respiratory tract was being pressured and he couldn't breath properly. With a powerful grip which can crush his neck bones, Hilda tormented Karito.

"Die, you will die too. You filthy demi-human companion...!"

Even if she had fallen from the 6th floor and hit the ground, with the helmet still wrapping her head firmly, Hilda growled. Her beautiful face distorted likewise a demon.

Blood was dripping not only from her mouth and nose, but also from her earholes. Unlike Karito's armour, her mithril steel armor does not possess the same overall protective effect. The shock from the crash with ground passed through the armor and damaged the skull as well as her internal organs. There is a high possibility that the brain itself may be damaged too.

In such circumstance, Karito stared at Hilda who was currently trying to kill him.

With the last loaded bullet, he pushed the muzzle of the desert eagle against Hilda's temple.

"But, I decline!!"

He squeezed the trigger and the hammer falls.

The .50 AE bullet fired from point blank caused an intense spark on the helmet surface. The slide of desert eagle had flipped open as it ran out of bullets.

Hilda's body, slowly rolled down from the wagon's wreckage.

CHAPTER 17

UNKNOWN

The silver-redhead war maiden collapsed, feebly.

“Hilda-sama... we were defeated...!”

After carrying another member of the Silver Corps to the Defense Forces Headquarters roof by Griffon, a platoon of the Sky Cavalry soldiers who continued to sporadically attacks from the sky witnessed the whole scene from the sky, crying out with shocked voices the whole time.

Only soldiers with outstanding eyesight were employed as Sky Cavalry soldiers. Due to this they were able to perceive enemies figures under their sharp eyes; that was why they were able to confirm the blood seeping out from the hole on Hilda’s face as she collapse unmoving.

The murderer was an enemy soldier wearing a black armor in a shape that they have never seen before. They watched as he slowly raised his body to remove the round helmet exposing his face to the outside air.

Everything about his man was black: short black hair, black eyes, black armour. Even the mysterious weapon that had shot the head of the Captain of the Silver Corps - Hilda of [Flame Sword] had a black luster to it.

“There is no way this is a reality...”

Before she descended down to the Conference Room, “in the unlikely event” where Hilda was defeated, she had given an order. Even though the Platoon Captain still couldn’t accept reality, he took out a light orb - a flare made from spirit magic - and he shot it over his head.

It was the signal to retreat. Originally, it should have been given at an earlier stage.

All of this was caused by the Supreme Commander, or rather FORMER Supreme Commander, desperately trying to protect himself. Hundreds of soldiers continued to

attack under his orders, no, it might have been thousands of soldiers. He did not want to think about it anymore.



For a moment, every sound disappeared.

The first to react was the other Sky Cavalries. They continued to give a support from the sky while the other members of Silver Corps struggled through the defensive army soldiers on the wall.

Several Sky Cavalry Members were lost in exchange for 10 times the number of Defense Force Soldiers. They also had the infantries support, who repeatedly attempted to climb over the castle walls, indirectly attracting of the enemy soldiers.

As the Silver Corps saw the flare rise up, all of them were startled for a moment. After a moment of hesitation, they jumped off the top of the castle walls and disappeared among the infantries. In an instant, the figures of the Silver Corps disappeared inside the waves of infantry, their frustration, and regrets haunting their minds as they had almost captured the enemy's castle.

Finally, it was the ground troops' turn. They drew back from the walls and returned to the main street like a tide. However, if one looked at it from the sky, their retreat did not look like a formation of retreating soldiers but that of a mob of exhausted men.

It was not until most of the Alwina Soldiers have disappeared from their positions that the survivors of Defense Force finally understood their victory and erupted in excitement, simultaneously. The cheers from tattered beastman and human soldier were heard by the platoon leader who had remained in the sky; tears of regret almost leaked out from a corner of his eyes

He was assaulted by an impulse to dive down and shoot magic randomly but suppressed it with strong self-control. There is something more meaningful to be done for everyone than doing something reckless alone.

For example, reporting the information of the unknown enemy who defeated Hilda the [Flame Sword], assuming the strongest in the Alwina Kingdom Army, back home.

At least, he wanted to collect the dead body of the beautiful female knight and bury it

in their home country, but he could only hold back his tears and abandon it there.

He could only hope that those half baked beasts and human traitors do not soil her corpse any further.

“That face, I will never forget...!”

The Platoon Captain’s gaze was full of hate for the perpetrator, Karito, as he pulled the reins of his beloved beast and flew away after his subordinates.



Perhaps... we won?

The cheers of the survivors can be heard from far away, giving the victory a weak sense of reality.

Karito stood up from the carriage wreckage and approached Hilda’s side. Of course, he did not forget to insert a new magazine into the desert eagle, ready to shoot anytime.

First, he checks her state by lightly kicking her hands and feet, that looked like an abandoned doll. There was no reaction. She did not even twitch. Then, he extended his hand to poke at her several times before extending a hand towards her helmet, with the muzzle out of course.

He removed the helmet, slowly. The Mythrill helmet hadn’t lost its white shine, even after the intense battle, now had a slight burn mark and dent from the bullet. It is unexpectedly light in his hand. He was amazed at this nonsensical material.

After he took off her helmet completely, he was taken aback by Hilda’s beautiful face. Her features were impressive, reminding him of a Hollywood actress who specializes in acting as an evil woman who bewitches and misleads the people around her. If blood was not flowing out of the hole in her face, it would be more charming to look at.

She was still alive. The sound of her breath was smaller than a mosquito's and her eyes were not focused, similar to being unconscious, but her mouth was slightly opening and closing repeatedly.

When he looked closely, her head was slightly crooked in a questionable angle. Her cervical spine and skull were also damaged. But when he removed the helmet from her head, he felt something out of place around the temple where he shot a .50 AE bullet.

The moment when he looked into Hilda's crimson eyes, which burned brighter than blood, and saw nothing, Karito felt a strange cold assaulting the pits of his stomach. It was like he was pierced by an ice spear.

Ever since he left the hut, he had killed countless people. It was not his first time seeing dying people at a close proximity, but this is the first time he had injured a "woman" with his own hands; and it was a fatal injury, too.

What exactly is the nature of the cold sensation that assaulted his stomach? Discomfort? A sense of guilt? Or could it be aversion? Whichever it was, it was definitely not a good one, Karito thought. Even though he had killed many thus far none had made him feel this way. No, it was simply he could not afford to have such feelings.

But, should he be asked who should be held responsible, he understood that it could be no one else but himself.

He lifted the muzzle. Now, there was no longer any obstruction between Hilda's head and the muzzle. All he has to do was to squeeze the trigger and the .50 AE bullet will crush his anxiety away.

Karito understood that it was the best option. Even though he understood it, Karito just stood there without doing anything.

He couldn't take his eyes off from hers' which was slowly being drained of life. If only he had not looked at her face, maybe then he could have shot her, but now he was unable to move a finger.

Time passes slowly...

What am I waiting for... , Karito questioned himself. He killed dozens and even hundreds of people till now. After coming this far, it will only add one more kill to the death count. Besides, she is an [enemy] right?

" ... "

Karito tried convincing himself to cut off an unnecessary feeling. An enemy is an enemy. It does not matter whether they are a man or woman. He has to make a decision now.

If someone were to get injured because Karito didn't kill her when he had a chance... How could he take responsibility if something happened to Reona, Rina, Ordy, or anyone else for that matter...?

Someone somewhere said this - Rather than regretting without killing, it is much better to regret after killing.

“~ ~ ~ ~urghhh!!”

He clenched hard and a scream escaped his mouth. He finally made a decision.

He wanted to be released from this unpleasant feeling that tormented his body by squeezing the trigger. However, his index finger placed on the trigger only bent slightly, the trigger felt awfully hard, as if the safety device was on.

He could hear noisy clattering footsteps approaching him from inside the building.

“Karito! Karito are you safe?!”

Marian's figure, who had just run out of the headquarters building, raised her voice out of concern.

The power he added on his index finger disappeared arbitrarily.

If he was an ordinary person, his figure would have already been reflected in her sight. But Karito, who could not feel spirits at all, was as good as an invisible person to her. In her spiritual eyes, only Hilda who lies unmoving was “visible”.

“...I am still alive somehow Marian-san.”

“Eh, are you there? Judging from your voice, your condition does not seem to be too bad.”

Although he was totally exhausted both in mind and body, his rough voice did not have

the quality of sounding forced or in pain and Marian sighed in relief.

Her attention moved from Karito to Hilda, who still taking faint breaths.

Examine Hilda with her spiritual eyes, she saw the flow of spirits were unusual. Some of the paths were distorted (internal bleeding and bone fractures), other places light particle looking spirits were leaking out of her body (external bleeding). Marian understood with a glance that the spirits circulating in Hilda's body were becoming weaker. The moment the flow completely stopped would indicate that she was dead.

"...are you not going to deal the last blow?"

Karito neither gave a response nor did he leave. He simply stood in his spot, silently.

'Good grief, you are still such a greenhorn'. While sighing, she knelt beside Hilda that was heading to death and placed her single hand, her left hand on Hilda's chest.

Magic power converged on her palm. Within a second the ball of light burst and quickly covered Hilda's body. Soon the distortion and spirit power that leaked from Hilda's body was blocked. Even the damaged skeleton was rearranged.

It is a complete recovery magic, particular to spiritual beings who wield large magic powers. Although the target is limited to an individual, once activated, it can heal any wounds so long as the person isn't dead.

"There is still some value to keep someone of her level alive."

Of course, she never thought she would ever have a reason to help the ringleader who had killed countless of her allies and even took one of her own arms (even though there is no danger to her life now or even bleeding from the wound), but seeing Hilda been reduced to a state where the knight was in tatters barely clinging onto life, even Marian's anger bubbled down, after all this is a war where to kill or be killed is natural. This way, they are in equal terms.

Moreover, alive, her value as a famous and important officer of the Kingdom of Alwina - Hilda of the [Flame Sword] could be used for political transactions. Of course, that was assuming the opponents did not lose their composure and patiently listened...

Be it a battlefield or a political scene, the more trump cards the better. In that aspect,

she was glad Karito had stopped and hesitated in dealing the final blow.

As for Hilda, her head, in particular, was in the worst condition. The image of the spirits inside of her skull was slowly eroding. It is a symptom typical of those who had their heads smashed. From her experience and knowledge, Marian knew that even if Karito had let her live Hilda would suffer from its after effects if it was not treated immediately.

Marian began her treatment, imaging the gathered particles flowing evenly inside Hilda's head. Even though the treatment of the head was the most troublesome, she finished quite quickly.

"Did you help her?"

"To kill and be killed is not all war is about. There are times where it is necessary not kill the enemy uselessly"

This story struck painfully into Karito. Karito had his hand full just trying to defend himself.

All that crossed his mind was to slaughter the enemy in front of him, as fast as he could, because he had to.

How many enemies had he killed, how many allies had been killed, how many allies were dying... he didn't have the slightest idea.

Despite their victory, Karito's mood was at its worst.

Half numb from seeing too much death, he was unable to fully grasp the sweet feeling of victory either. He watched the survivors of Defense Force cry in triumph along the castle walls, still stained with blood and injured.

An empty syringe rolled on his feet.

"...oh I need to treat everyone."

Before that, he needs to bind Hilda. Dragging his body, which screamed from pain and fatigue, he approached Hilda who has not regained her consciousness.

Leaving the responsibility to Marian, in case something happens, Karito grabbed Hilda's hand and bent it behind her to put a handcuff on it. At that moment...

"Urgh..."

"Tch, Has she regained her consciousness already!?"

"Karito get away!"

Hilda's eyelids slowly opened as she groaned.

Surprised at her suddenly regaining consciousness, he distanced himself and equipped the desert eagle again. Since all of her armor had been removed, the bullets will easily leave a large hole in her body. Marian had already finished preparing the magic and was possible to activate it at any time. Not even a piece of flesh will be left if it hits directly.

...wouldn't it be better to just forcibly restrain her like this? Even if he thought of such things now, it was already too late.

She slowly raised her body while holding her head and faced the two stiffly. The tension increased.

Hilda watched the figure of the two enemies absentmindedly, not moving at all. Even though they had confirmed her, she not attacking them with her fist immediately was kind of disappointing. Even if Hilda looked dazed, they simply could not let their guards down. His finger on the trigger felt like it was going to cramp from the tension.

After another 10 seconds, Hilda finally opened her mouth.

"I'm sorry... What on earth happened here? And who are you?, no, what have I been... in the first place, who am I..."

"... Haa?"

Karito and Marian voices overlapped. Their surprise at the response was to the extent that they lost the power on the hands holding the gun and cane, respectively.

"Urghh, my head hurts...! Why there is blood on my clothes? I can not remember

anything...!!”

“This, by any chance, could it be...?”

“Maybe it was because the two of you had fallen down together from such a height. Although I have heard of stories where memories can temporarily be disordered from head injuries, this is the first time from me to actually see it.”

Yes... Hilda has lost her memory when she regained her consciousness.

“Karito, could it be that Hilda’s head injury was also your doing? Don’t you think so?”

“I thought so, but it could also be from when we fell down together. I did fire a head shot through her helmet...”

“...to be able to injure someone through the mithril armor, you, are you sure you are not part of Orc group?”

“No way! Please don’t put me together with those creatures !”

Let’s see... what should they do after this? The two of them put their heads together to deal with the current “How did we get into this” situation.

Even in this puzzling situation, there is no way they could leave the shaken up Hilda alone. Regardless of her not showing any hostility, she was an enemy. Although they had intuitively judged that it was not an act, nobody knows when her memory will return. In other words, Hilda was a ticking time bomb now. It is completely unknown when she will explode and protective measures have to be made.

“It would be better to restrain her for time being.”

“I agree, It would be great to have a magic sealing collar but since there’s none at the moment I am rather worried. Just to be sure, it’s better that we restrain her mobility first.”

“Then, let me.”

“Wh, what are you going to do?”

Hilda impulsively stood on guard as he approached her with handcuffs. It can't be helped, if a stranger approaches with handcuffs, even if they could not remember anything they will feel frightened. There was a weird behavioral gap between the girl who had attacked relentlessly, exuding fiery bloodlust, and the frail and frightened looking girl now.

...It looks like it is Karito's fault that she changed that much.

Certainly, the timing to be confronted with a "memory loss from the strong impact on her head" kind of situation was unexpected. It was as though he was transferred to this fantasy world and were caught up in its war, a very frustrating situation indeed. Enough to make an atheist like himself to think that God must have hated him

He stopped his escaping-the-reality thoughts, made up his mind, and went closer to Hilda's side. "Hii!!" Hilda raised a small scream as she tried to deflect his extended hands and moves away from him.

Suddenly, a person barged into the scene with considerable vigor. It was Ordy, who had gathered the surviving Defense Forces and instructed them to continue observing/guarding the place while he searched for Karito, who had been missing. He was rather late as he had been taking care of the soldiers and their 3 figure were hidden by the wreckage of the horse carriage.

"So you are here, I have been looking for you Karito! Are you safe too!?"

"Hya!?"

"Hm?"

It took him a while to understand what had happened.

Frightened by Ordy's arrival, Hilda immediately hid behind Karito's back, clinging to him. Karito widened his eyes from the unexpected reaction while Marian could only murmur "oh dear ". Looking at the strangely beautiful girl (above all blood-stained) who was suddenly frightened, Ordy was taken by surprise.

"Karito, is that woman a refugee? Poor girl, she's covered in blood. Could it be that she was involved in the fight and got hurt———"

“Don’t, don’t come any closer!”

Hilda cries out as she prepares to run away and use Karito as a shield, even though Ordy had only called to her out of concern. He was unable to imagine that this was the same arrogant and blood-lusting Hilda, who had fought him and Marian back in the conference room, would be cowering like this.

The place where she clung to started to ache. By chance, the place where both of Hilda’s hands clung to was Karito’s arm joint.

“Wait, please calm down. It is alright now that the fight is over. You don’t have to be afraid anymore.”

“Nooo! Don’t come! Don’t come closer!”

“Ow, ouch ouch!! That hurts, please let me go!”

“What’s wrong Captain Ordy? Is there still a surviving enemy!?”

Soldiers started to gather after hearing the commotion. Making things worse, those who gathered were all beastman, dwarves, or other demi-human soldiers.

Of course, as a result, Hilda was forced further into a state of panic. Her face and body became significantly stiffer and she put more strength onto both of her hands.

“N, Noooooo~~~~~!!!!”

Crack

Argh!!!

...Despite the battle having been over, Karito joined the number of injured members.



PDF BY: TRAITORAIZEN